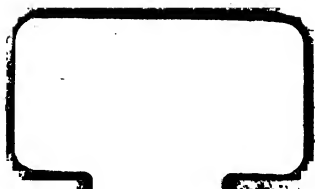


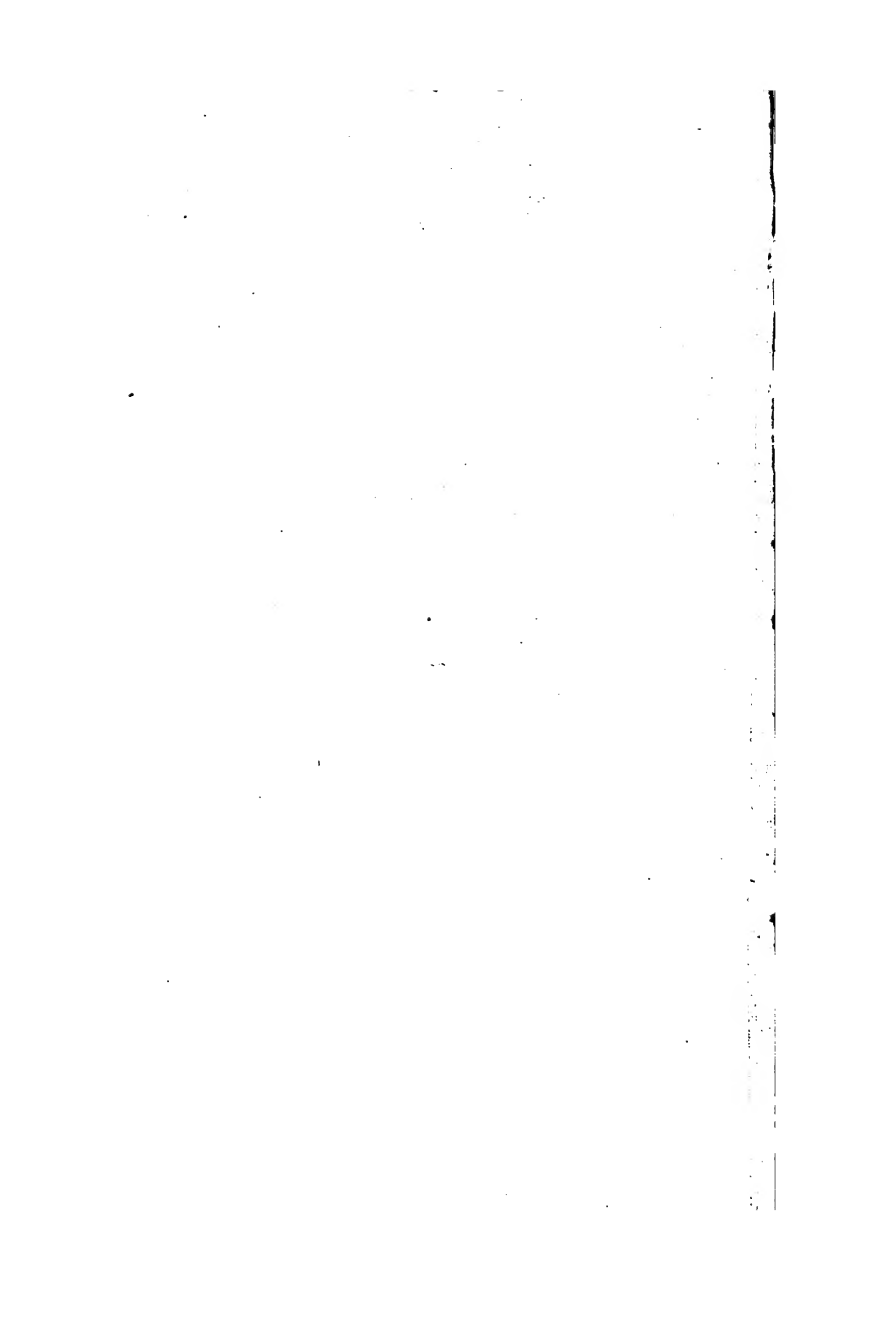
NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 08244489 8



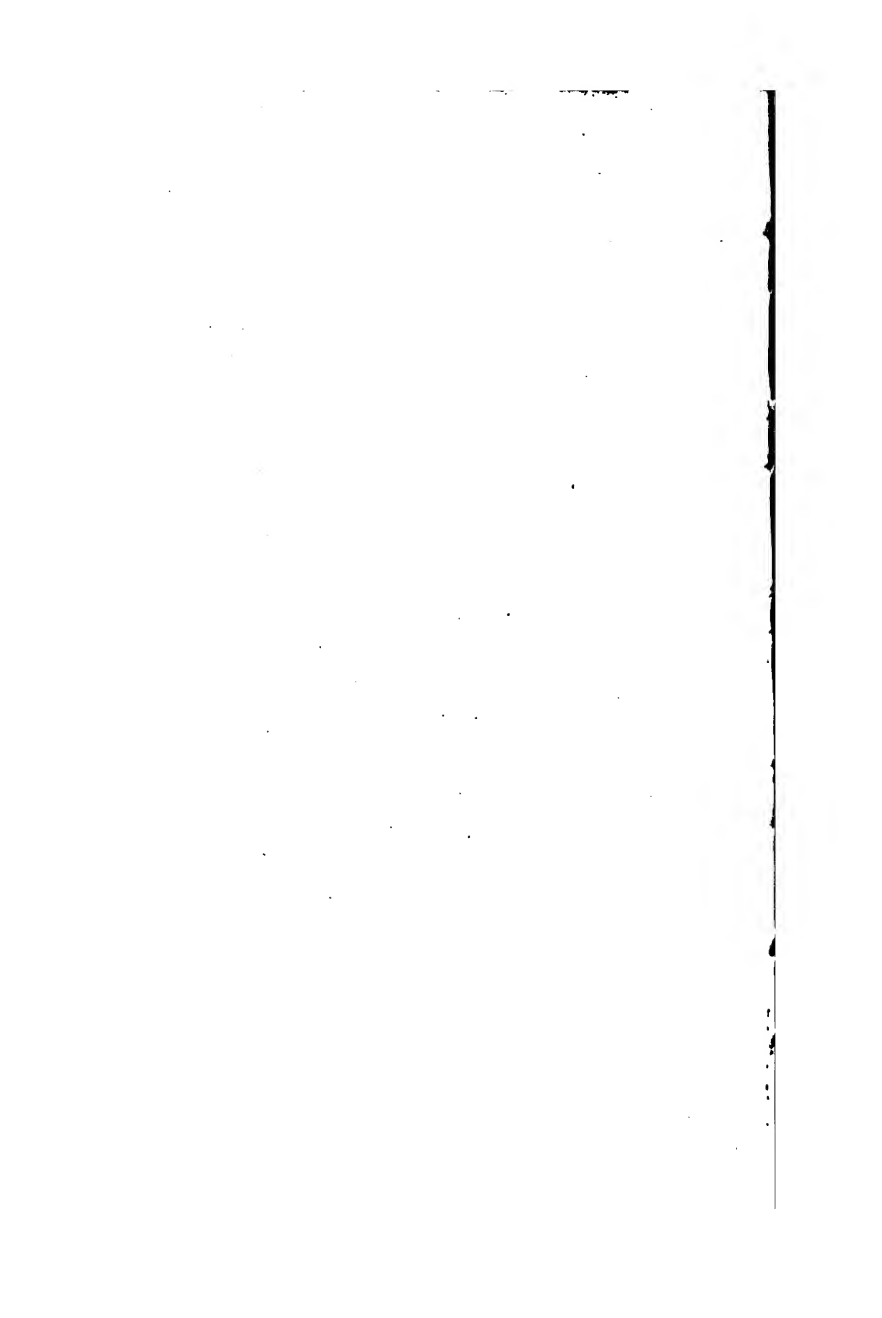
17





**THE NEW YORK  
PUBLIC LIBRARY**

**ASTOR, LENOX  
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS**







115

J. D. Dyer, Pentonville, London

EXTRACTS  
FROM THE LETTERS AND JOURNALS  
OF  
GEORGE FLETCHER MOORE, ESQ.  
NOW FILLING A JUDICIAL OFFICE  
AT THE  
WAN RIVER SETTLEMENT,

EDITED BY  
MR. MARTIN DOYLE,  
AUTHOR OF "HINTS TO SMALL FARMERS," &c. &c.

LONDON:  
R AND SMITH, AMEN CORNER, PATERNOSTER ROW,  
W. CURRY, JUN. & CO, UPPER SACKVILLE-STREET, DUBLIN.

1834.

34507A

LONDON :  
PRINTED BY HEADWORTH AND EVANS,  
WHITEFRIARS.

## P R E F A C E.

---

HAPPENING to be at the Smithfield market, in Dublin, a few months ago, I met a stranger, who showed me a very fine sample of white wheat, which had grown on our colonial soil in Western Australia. Our conversation turned, in consequence, on many particulars relating to the circumstances of the Settlement on the Swan River; in the course of which my companion informed me that one of his brothers is a settler there.

Our chat terminated most agreeably, with an invitation for me to dine the same day at the house of this gentleman,—Mr. Joseph Moore,—and to look over certain letters and memoranda which the emigrant had regularly transmitted

from the period of his location. These I considered interesting, and communicative of the *practical* information which is so desirable.

In short, I suggested the publication of them, to which my host reluctantly assented, waiving a very serious obstacle, viz. the probable displeasure of the absent brother, at the publication of letters solely intended for his own family-circle. This objection I over-ruled by the assurance that they contained nothing discreditable to the head or the heart of the writer.

If, therefore, they prove deficient in interest and neatness of arrangement, the blame consequent on their failure will be solely attributable to my want of judgment, and clumsiness of connexion.

Should the emigrant himself be much offended at the unauthorised liberty now taken with his name and papers, I have the comforting consideration that he is *too far off* to quarrel with me in a *very personal* way ; and that if ever he should return to this country, his resentment will have had sufficient time to evaporate altogether.



to the portion of the public interested in the subject of emigration, the minute and regular details afforded in the following pages are most important, especially when they may be depended upon as critically true.

The writer neither wishes to promote nor to discourage emigration to his own settlement; he has no personal interest in communicating facts,—these, therefore, constitute a valuable and certain testimony.

In my very humble capacity of Editor, I have experienced little difficulty, except in the encounter of a few Latin quotations.

My readers are already aware of my often acknowledged ignorance of the dead, or learned languages, as they are termed: the quotations of a *market note* are such, indeed, even in my own language, as I am most familiar with. To me, therefore, those of Horace, Virgil, &c. are totally unintelligible.

But happily for my Editorial fame, one of my sons, a student in Trinity College, Dublin, has been with me during the vacation, and has un-

dertaken the direction of the Latin department, which, in truth, has but very limited extent. Like all boys, however, he may have been too anxious for the exhibition of his own puerile conceits in certain Latin notes which I see appended to the text. Of this *I* cannot judge—the reader may;—but whatever unfavourable opinions he may form of young Martin's taste and acquirements, *I* intreat his suppression of them, lest the aspiring energies of the youngster be extinguished by the damping effects of rigid criticism.

MARTIN DOYLE.

Ballyorley, April, 1834.

## INTRODUCTION.

---

**THE** western side of Australia is traversed for some hundred miles by a chain of mountains, called the Darling, running from north to south nearly parallel with the coast. A fine tract of country, ornamented by large forest trees and flowering shrubs, extends itself to their base, a distance varying from thirty to fifty miles, and continues to their termination near Cape Chatham, the southern extremity of the continent.

From these mountains flow the Swan and Canning Rivers, whose united waters discharge themselves into an estuary nine miles long, and between three and four miles broad, called Melville Water. The entrance to the estuary is over

a bar of rocks, with only six feet at low water. This bar extends about three quarters of a mile ; the water deepens four and six fathoms near the shore, and upwards of eight fathoms towards the centre, and thus continues for some miles.

The Swan River (so named by Vlaning in 1697, from the great number of black swans which he saw there) is navigable for boats as far as the tide flows, more than forty miles from the coast. The height of the mountains ranges from 1,000 to 1,500 feet—some are considerably higher—and Mount William elevates its rugged top three thousand feet above the level of the sea.

The distance across the range is from twenty-five to thirty miles, beyond which, fertile plains open to the view, beautifully wooded, and stretching towards the south-east as far as the eye can reach. The progress of further discovery towards the east has been extended fifty miles eastward of Perth across the mountains. The settlement of York has been established on a river called the Avon, the course of which is from south-east to north-west ; but its source and termination are

as yet unknown. The land to the south is more fertile than that towards the north, the atmosphere cooler, and the climate more agreeable.

About eighty miles to the south of the Swan River, is the River Colley, which, taking its rise in the Darling Mountains, flows (with two other rivers) into Port Leshenhault, an estuary sixteen or eighteen miles in length.

The banks of the Colley are said to be beautiful; there is a bar at its mouth which prevents the entrance of vessels of any considerable burthen. The soil between it and the Canning River (nearest to the mountains) is of clay or red marl, occasionally interspersed with sandy loam, like that of Shropshire, and well adapted to agricultural purposes; towards the coast, the soil is light and sandy, but producing large timber; the banks of the rivers abound in rich alluvial flats; the mountains, composed of granite, are generally rugged.

Of the country between the Colley and Cape Lewin but little is as yet known. Where it has been penetrated (as from the river Vasse) it pre-

sents the same appearance as in the neighbourhood of the Colley. Immediately round Cape Lewin, to the east, a town has been founded, called Augusta, at the mouth of the Blackwood, which debouches into a commodious inlet of the sea. This river is navigable for boats for twenty-five or thirty miles, and the banks are well timbered. Between Augusta and King George's Sound the coast has not been accurately traced; it is supposed to contain some considerable inlets: towards Cape Chatham one is known to exist, which may, perhaps, receive the waters falling from the east side of the Darling range, and those which have their source in the western declivity of a parallel range, terminating near Point Hillier. To the north of Point Hillier there is a fine country, well wooded and watered; to the east of which lies King George's Sound, where there was once a convict settlement; but the convicts have been removed for the purpose of placing it under the jurisdiction of Governor Stirling. Between this part of the colony and Swan River is contained, according to the report

---

of those who have traversed it, an extensive tract of beautiful country, well adapted to either pasture or agriculture. The climate is excellent : the rigours of winter and the oppressive heats of summer being equally unknown. Snow never falls there ; and frost is rarely experienced ; and even in the winter, vegetation advances. In the warmest months of summer the mornings and evenings are cool, and the noon-day heat is often tempered by a cooling breeze.

The present Governor is a great favourite with the colonists, active and enterprising ; regardless of bodily fatigue and inconvenience, he is well calculated to promote the interest of an infant settlement. He has sent out several parties of discovery, buoyed off the entrance to the harbour ; personally surveyed the coast four degrees north of the Swan River, and to the south and east round Cape Lewin, and beyond King George's Sound ; and when unfavourable rumours of the instability of the colony were circulated, and when the stock of provisions was exhausted, and no supplies were furnished from Van Diemen's Land

and Sydney ; when a year had elapsed without arrivals from Great Britain, he came in person, at the earnest solicitation of the colonists, to represent their circumstances to the Home Government in London, and to have them placed on a less dependent footing.

The result of his application to the colonial ministers has been successful, and he has returned to gladden the hearts of the settlers with the assurance that their interests will not be overlooked, and that their settlement may yet become an important one in the History of Nations.

When Great Britain, from the superabundance of her treasures and her population, is sending forth her tens of thousands to lay the foundation of future kingdoms, to plant her standard, establish her religion, her laws, her language, and her commerce, in distant territories, Western Australia, we trust, will not be among the least favoured and least vigorous of her offshoots.

Emigrants will find much important information in Sir James Stirling's Reports, one of which contains a table of the distances from Cockburn



Sound to different parts of the world, with the average time occupied in the voyage by a fast-sailing vessel. It is here subjoined:—

## FROM THE COCKBURN SOUND.

	Distance.	Wind.	Time. Days.
To Timor . . .	1,500	S.E.	12
Java . . .	1,700	—	13
Madras . . .	3,400	—	30
Ceylon . . .	3,100	—	28
Mauritius . .	3,400	—	21
Cape of Good Hope .	5,003	—	31
England—the passage may be made in . .	.	.	84
Van Diemen's Land	2,200	S.W.	42
Port Jackson . .	2,600	—	50



## CONTENTS.

### THE VOYAGE.

Reflections on leaving Land—Duties of the Sabbath Day —Meet a Vessel in Distress—Trade Winds—Madeira —Flying Fish described—Pilot Fish—Portuguese Man of War—Memorials of Home—Epitaph on his Spaniel —Rain—A strange Sail—Crossing the Line—The Southern Cross—The Cape—Stanzas—Termination of the Voyage. - - - - -	Page 1
---	--------

### THE COLONY.

Appearance of the Country—Conflict with the Natives— The Natives described—Difficulties of some of the Set- tlers—Prospects of the Colony—The Scenery on Can- ning River—Freemantle—Hints to Settlers—Neces- saries and Superfluities—Obtain a Grant at the Head of the Swan River. - - - - -	30
--	----

### THE COLONY.

Capabilities of the Colony—Scarcity of Cattle—Kangaroo Hunt—Loses himself in the Bush—Sites of New Towns—Aspect of the Country—Markets. - - -	39
---	----

## THE COLONY

Soil of the Country—Alluvial Flats—Vegetable Productions—The Grass Tree—Quadrupeds—Birds and Fish—Climate—Insects—Rapidity of Production and Decay—Reptiles—The Natives—The Settlers—Jurisdiction of the Governor—Cattle—The Author's House described	Page 43
---	---------

## THE COLONY.

The Author's Occupations—Frogs—His Garden—Wild Turkeys—Catches a Snake and Centipede—Kangaroo Hunt—Disappointment—The Botanic Gardens—Farming Occupations—A Storm—Providential Escape—Receives Packet from Home—Value of Kangaroo Dogs—The Anihu—Symptoms of Winter—Great Want of Stone—Loses his Cow—Flowers and Songsters of Swan River.	54
--	----

## THE COLONY.

Swan River Fare—Servants' Wages—Price of Clothing, Provisions, &c.—Costume—Singular Phenomena—Approach of Spring—Constant Succession of Flowers—Projected Journey with Mr. Dale—Agricultural Meeting—The Governor's Ball.	79
---	----

## THE JOURNEY.

New Settlement—First Day's Journey—Catches two Lizards—Rescues a young Kangaroo—Constant successions of Hills—The River Avon—Aspect of the Country—Hills—Plants—Singular Cave—River becomes salt—Soil more barren—Come to a fresh water
---

Lake—Capture an Ant-eater—Improvement in the Country—The River becomes absorbed in the Earth—Return to Mount Bakewell—Resume the Journal—Surprise a Native Family—Continue their Journey—Reach Perth—Reflections on the Journey—Depredations of the Natives—Insolence of Servants—Swan River—Harvest Home.	-	-	-	Page 90
--	---	---	---	---------

## PERTH.

Complaints of the Colonists—Scarcity of Provisions—Swan River compared with Van Diemen's Land—The Author's Appointment—Weather—Difficulties of the Colonists—Resemblance between Cockatoos and Crows—Lascar Law-suit—Home Recollections—A new Settler—Mode of employing Time—The Kangaroo Rat—A Manuscript Newspaper—Projected Bank—A Settler killed—King George's Sound—Speculations on the Country—Emigration—Attempt on the Author's Life—Law Affairs.	-	-	-	-	136
---	---	---	---	---	-----

## VOYAGE.

Litigation—Voyage to King George's Sound—New Zealanders—Carmac Island—Cape Lewin—Oyster Harbour—Interview with the Natives.	-	-	-	222
---	---	---	---	-----

## THE COLONY.

Leave King George's Sound—Flinder's Bay—The Blackwood River—Interview with the Natives—Arrival of the Merope—Advance of the Colony	-	-	-	232
--	---	---	---	-----

## THE COLONY.

Arrival of Letters, &c.—Cost of Wheat—High Charges of Mechanics—Recollections of Home—Scarcity of
---

Labour—Government Supplies—Broils with the Na-	
tives—Litigation—Execution of Midgegoroo—Ya-gan	
—The Natives.	Page 24

## THE COLONY.

Servants—Farming—The Natives—Sheep—White Ants	
—Depredations of the Natives—Wool—A Boy killed	
—Death of Ya-gan—Conclusion,	27

## THE VOYAGE.

REFLECTIONS ON LEAVING LAND—DUTIES OF THE SABBATH-DAY  
—MEETS A VESSEL IN DISTRESS—TRADE WINDS—MADEIRA—  
FLYING FISH DESCRIBED—PILOT FISH—PORTUGUESE MAN OF  
WAR—MEMORIALS OF HOME—EPITAPH ON HIS SPANIEL—RAIN  
—A STRANGE SAIL—CROSSING THE LINE—THE SOUTHERN  
CROSS—THE CAPE—STANZAS—TERMINATION OF THE VOYAGE.

DEAR BROTHER,

EXHAUSTED with sleeplessness and agitation, I threw myself into my berth soon after you and my dear father left me, still indulging a hope of seeing you on board once more before sailing. On awaking from long and painful slumber, disturbed by a confusion of all imaginable noises, I found that a steamer had taken us out of the harbour in the course of the night, and that we were at a considerable distance from land. The reflection then crossed me, that I was for the first time separated from my family and friends,

“Quæro alio patriam sub sole jacentem;”

and placed as it were, alone on the ocean of

life, to steer my own way, and depend on my single efforts, without the friendly hand of the dear parent, who had hitherto been my guide and companion—the “custos incorruptissimus,”—without the interchange of fraternal love, and with the heavy responsibility of having embarked four others in my service and speculations; for whose welfare of mind and body I feel myself accountable; under all these anxious thoughts and considerations, I prayed to God, the only source of calmness and of comfort, to strengthen and support me.

To vary the usual monotony and dulness of the long and painful voyage before me, I shall keep a journal, which, if it ever reach you, will make me present to you all\*.

*Sunday, June 4th, 1830.*—In pursuance of a determination, which I had previously formed, never to omit, when practicable, the duties of the Sabbath-day, either at sea or in the land of my destination, I read prayers and a suitable service to my own people; great interruptions, from several causes, occurred, but I persevered, and had the satisfaction of finding that the captain would be pleased at having the service on deck for the advantage of the crew. Wind moderate and favourable, our lat. 46°, lon. 10°, and yet

---

\* Many parts of the Log-book are abbreviated, or omitted altogether, as containing details too familiar to be generally interesting.—Ed.



the weather cool. Thermometer only 64°,—great talk of being in the latitude of *pirates*, and consequent cleaning and preparing of all our fire-arms—saw nothing, however, more terrible than some large porpoises playing about the bows of the vessel. Experienced the want of a filtering machine for our water, which already smells offensively and tastes badly. This is a sad want. It is inexcusable in the captains of vessels to be unprovided with this valuable and unexpensive apparatus, which conduces so much to health and comfort.

*July 8th.*—Approaching the trade winds; James killed a pig in the evening—quite an event! This same James makes himself very useful in many ways; he takes particular pleasure in feeding our sheep, but whether this taste proceeds from a disinterested benevolence, or from the anticipated enjoyment of good mutton chops, I cannot say.

*9th.*—A vessel in sight, making signals of distress. Hove to. She sent a boat to us. Proves to be the Patriot, from Benecarlo to Dublin. had been six weeks at sea, sprung a leak, and was kept afloat by incessant exertions at the pump. Her provisions were running short, so that we were obliged to give her a supply of water and biscuit, some coals also, and leather for the pump. Many of us took the opportunity of writing to our friends, as well as the

limited time would permit. I wrote a few lines (thought crowding upon thought in the *happiest confusion*) to my dear father and brother. As the captain of the Patriot did not seem quite sure of his reckoning, we gave it correctly to him; he had two officers on board who wished for newspapers, which unluckily for them and the credit of our philanthropy we did not share. Being now 16° W. our time is one hour and four minutes later than at Greenwich, each degree making a difference of four minutes. The most perceptible difference in our latitude is the short duration of twilight.

We expect to fall in with the regular S.E. trade wind a few degrees on this (north) side of the line; our course must then be directed towards South America, until this region be traversed, after which we may calculate on variable winds until we shall have reached a more southerly latitude, when westerly winds will prevail again. Remained late on deck in the evening, watching the phosphoric brilliancy which every one has witnessed at sea, and the deep blue of the ocean.

11/h.—At four in the morning passed Madeira, lying about twenty-five miles to the east. Most delightful day; wind moderate and steady from the N.E., supposed to be the regular trade wind. Read morning service, and the psalms and lessons for the day, with a sermon; the

captain, passengers, and crew, with the exception of two or three, attending in the large cabin—a gratifying and impressive scene. No vessel, no living thing in sight, except a solitary bird, one of Mother Carey's chickens. Ship going at the rate of nine knots, and rolling more than is quite comfortable. Peak of Teneriffe not yet visible. Saw flying fish for the first time. They seemed to spring up from the side of the vessel as if startled, sometimes taking a considerable flight, at other times just touching the waters and then rising again. Occasionally a single one rises, at other times twenty or thirty spring up together. I could not perceive any vibrations in their fins, or wings; whichever naturalists please to call them. Most of them are of a silver grey; a few of yellow or gold colour. We are supposed to be now about the tropic. Thermometer 80°. Water miserably bad; even filtering fails to improve it, as one of our passengers, who happens to have a good filtering machine, assures me. The only way to swallow it without disgust, is in negus, with plenty of lemon juice.

Saw a pilot fish, which is about the size of a mackerel, with stripes on his sides like those of a zebra. I am told that he generally accompanies the shark; the latter, however, did not appear, but towards evening a large shoal of porpoises surrounded the vessel, apparently

more for sport than prey, their gambols being of the most comic kind. This night the captain took an observation of the north star; the sky too cloudy to be very accurate. Thermometer  $80^{\circ}$ . This degree of heat produces in me, great languor by day and restlessness by night. Lat. at noon,  $18^{\circ}, 16'$ . We hope to see Antonio, one of the Cape Verd Islands, to-morrow. The anxiety with which we look for the smallest island is inconceivable to those who have not been exposed for many days to the monotony of time passed on the ocean.

*Sunday, 18th.*—I officiated as usual for a congregation of about thirty-six persons, apparently interested and attentive to the services of the day. Thermometer  $80^{\circ}$ , at two, P.M. This day, for the first time, we saw a shark gliding slowly along, with its fin just above the water's surface, and in his wake followed a great train of what the sailors call Portuguese men of war; and a long shoal of flying-fish and bonetas, so that we had something to look at. We are disappointed in our hope of seeing the land of St. Antonio, the weather proving hazy, and there being every indication of our losing the N. E. trade wind, and falling in with the S. W. wind, which prevails about the Cape Verd Islands. The heat at night, thermometer  $82^{\circ}$ , is very oppressive, so much so, that I can hardly bear even a sheet over me.

*19th.*—This day has been marked by a fearful

accident. We had been all anxiously looking out for fish, and endeavouring to catch men of war by means of buckets, and had just succeeded in capturing one, (which I shall describe by and by,) when a boy, in the act of throwing out a bucket, became entangled in the rope attached to it, and was dragged overboard. A sailor looking on, instantly jumped into the sea, and by assisting and encouraging the youngster, until a boat was lowered, saved his life. Providentially the day was calm, and the boy had great presence of mind, and swam pretty well, though he had all his clothes on, except his shoes. The brave fellow, who risked his life for the lad, is George Southern, son of a respectable man living at Bray; his amiable and obliging temper had rendered him a general favourite previously to this occurrence, which of course has not lowered him in the scale of estimation. I was in the cabin when the alarm was given, and on reaching deck, George had made such way towards the boy, who sustained himself boldly, that my only apprehension was, that the sharks would meet them. If these monsters were in our track, the bustle and noise from the ship, and the appearance of the boat, kept them at a distance;—it was a scene of intense and awful anxiety. May we all give praise where it is due, and may our praises be accepted!

I threatened to describe the man of war:—it consists of a bladder filled with air, from which

depend roots or feelers, nearly four feet long. One of the roots of this zoophyte I have now examined with a microscope ; it is no thicker than a thread, transparent, and hollow, with many knots or joints, from which other minuter fibres extend. After I had handled these fibres, I experienced a prickly sensation like that of needles in my face, on the application of my hand. This I am unable to account for. I have lately acquired the habit of taking a night bath, by having water pumped over me. The time which I have chosen has been about an hour before midnight, in order to obtain cool and refreshing sleep. Last night, after my bath, I remained a long time on deck *en chemise*, without any inconvenience whatever. Thermometer yesterday, lat. 15° 4', in my sleeping cabin stood at 81° ; in the afternoon 85°, and on deck 92° 22'. This day we have had a great addition to our live stock, Poor lass having presented me with nine puppies, five of which were committed to the deep. I have been obliged to keep four, to gratify the urgent solicitations of some of our passengers ; but I fear that the mother has not strength or nutriment sufficient, and milk is a scarce article now on board. The dozen bottles which I had brought with me, boiled, corked, and hermetically sealed, soon became sour ; even Poor lass, for whose accouchement I had kept it, since it proved unfit for her master, refuses to drink it ; —tell this to all whom it may concern.

The effects of the heat have been proved on our mutton, (the sheep which James killed three days ago, being quite offensive, though washed with chloride of lime), and still more lamentably on Poor lass, who is staggering about, restless and feverish, and half frantic; at one time coming down to my cabin, at another wandering about the deck, as if in search of something, and paying little attention to her young ones; indeed her doing so would be of little service, her milk being gone; I have given her medicine, and whatever else I could think of as possibly servicable to her.

24th.—Poor lass is no more. I grieve at her death, for she formed a link of associations with home and its inmates. Oh! how bitter are the thoughts of the exile!

“ Every tedious stride I make  
Will but remember me what a deal of world  
I wander from the jewels that I love.”

How often, and with what intense anxiety, do I contemplate successively the many little memorials of affection and friendship, which are almost always before me! Not only those which you, and my father and sister have given, and which are associated in some way or other with all my occupations, whether praying, reading, writing, marking the progress of time, or preparing for eternity; but those tokens of regard which I have received from

comparative strangers. I constantly wear a ring which — gave me just before I came away: Poor fellow! *he* could scarcely speak, *I* could not articulate a syllable. I trust before this, his anxious and affectionate heart has found rest and peace in wedded life! I dress every day before a glass belonging to a case given me by Miss T——.

Instances of Mrs. R.'s kindness are constantly before me. Poor John Maguire, (Joseph's old servant,) with tears in his eyes, entreated my acceptance of a handsome dark lantern, which he had had for one and twenty years. It is now suspended in my cabin, and my reminiscences revert with as much gratification to this keepsake of poor John's, as to any other that I see around me. Furlong's kindness and attention appear in several marks of his friendship. A cabin lamp, fowling-piece, and pair of pistols, an apparatus for kindling an instantaneous light, are suspended in my cabin; and when I look at these articles, as well as at the books, and many other of his gifts, I am filled with gratitude at his disinterested friendship; but I shall not dwell more upon recollections. I cannot dare to indulge in the "solemn sorrows of suffocating *sensibility*," as Bridgetina Botherum says, else I should unnerve my mind when it has need of all its fortitude; and yet, my dear brother, I cannot avoid giving you the rhythmical produce of my waking thoughts last night,



or rather at peep of day this morning, soon after the death of Poor lass. My melancholy must have vent, and though there is sad *wastry*, as Rose Anne would say, as applies to paper, yet, under existing circumstances, I may be allowed to play the fool, if it were only for my beloved sister's sake. She knows, when the fit comes on, how hard I find it to resist. Was ever an epitaph on spaniel composed in my present position? Lat. 11° 12'. Here goes.

Aye! give the body to the deep,  
That universal grave;  
There let it sleep the dreamless sleep,—  
Its mound—an ocean wave.

In losing thee, I've lost a friend,  
Whose instinct worth, well tried,  
Could service with affection blend,  
Though reason was denied.

If thou hadst reach'd the look'd for land,  
I hoped to see thee bound  
With frolic gambols on the strand,  
And hail the adopted ground.

I pictured oft thy mute surprise,  
When (instinct still the same)  
New climes had shown thy wond'ring eyes  
Some unaccustomed game.

I thought to see thee at my side,  
Watch the uplifted gun—  
Or view thee in thy race of pride,—  
But now thy race is run.

Wakeful guard 'gainst nightly spoil,  
 Companion of the day;  
 Cheerful partner of my toil,  
 Thou'rt call'd, and must obey.

What meant that last, that wistful gaze,  
 When at thy master's tread,  
 Thy little strength was meant to raise  
 The drooping, dying head?

Was it in hope his essayed skill  
 E'en yet might bring relief?  
 His power accords not with his will,  
 He could but vent his grief.

Or was it meant as to commend  
 Thy new born young bereft?  
 Could substituted care befriend  
 A progeny thus left?

Th' Equator's sun—weak ill-timed brood!  
 Has drain'd your fountain dry;  
 And here no artificial food  
 Can nature's store supply.

Poor victim of a torrid clime,  
 Where e'en to breathe is pain,  
 Cut off in all thy vigour's prime,  
 Thou'rt gone;—regret is vain.

The wise may think 'tis weak in me,  
 To grieve;—so let it pass:  
 But yet I feel, in losing thee,  
 I've lost a friend,—poor Lass.

*Sunday, 25th.*—Read church service and a sermon as usual. Robert has absented himself **ont** his and the preceding Sunday, without any good or apparent cause; I must remonstrate;—strongly

impressed myself with the many mercies of a kind Providence, and the dependence of his creatures on him for each moment of their existence, every circumstance of their prosperity, and every hope of future happiness, I consider myself involved in the fate of those who have accompanied me, and bound to confirm them, as far as I am able, in religious principles and observances.

Weather fine, but warm and close; a numerous shoal of porpoises have come rushing towards the ship with great violence. "They are just like sheep sporting in a field," said Letty, and it was not a bad simile for their boundings and gambols; and although it was comical enough to see these animals floundering about, I could not help feeling some alarm on the recollection of an observation Captain Cook makes somewhere in his voyages, "that the playing of porpoises\* round the ship

---

\* This prognostic (for I believe there is some such notion prevalent) may have arisen merely from the superstition of seamen. Shakspeare, with his admirable accuracy of observation has alluded to this belief:—Ed.

"*3rd Fisherman.* Faith, master, I am thinking of the poor men that were cast away before us, even now."

"*1st Fisherman.* Alas, poor souls! it grieved my heart to hear what pitiful cries they made to us to help them, when, well-a-day, we could scarce help ourselves.

"*3rd Fisherman.* Nay, master, said I not as much when I saw the *porpus*, how he bounced, and tumbled? they say they are half-fish, half-flesh; a plague on them, they never come but I look to be washed."

was a certain indication of an approaching gale ;" this remark made by so experienced a seaman was calculated to excite apprehension in a landsman.

25th.—This day has been delicious—one of heavy incessant rain, welcomed by the crew, passengers, and every living animal on board ; it is the first heavy rain, of any consequence, we have had since we sailed, and as our allowance of water has been very limited, we all eagerly prepared for a general ablution of clothes. Letty's obliging temper has been taken full advantage of, every one applying to her in difficulties, and she does everything in her power to accommodate. We have saved much of the rain, and I have bottled a large supply for my own use.

28th.—During the few preceding days, the air has been cool—wind variable, and sometimes foul. A dolphin went off with a line and hook in his stomach this day. I fear that he will suffer from dyspepsia.

We had been complaining of the monotony of our time, "one day telling another and one night certifying another," when a vessel was descried ; conjecture became immediately busy, and her movements and appearance were watched with intense interest.

29th.—At length we communicated by signals with the strange sail, which proved to be not a pirate, as we had dreaded, but the brig Harriet, bound for Buenos Ayres.

30th.—I slept uncommonly well last night, which I attribute to my having taken a cold bath immediately before retiring to bed ; breeze unfavourable, lat.  $6^{\circ} 42'$  at noon. It is not recommended to come closer to the coast than 18 long. We are now opposite Sierra Leone, and are entertained by the sailors with agreeable tales of the corsairs, seven of whom, my story tellers asserted, they have seen beheaded at Cadiz. Our determination is to fight manfully, if we should be attacked by an equal force ; if by an overwhelming one, to submit quietly at once. Some of these pirates have eighty men and ten or twelve guns : we have but twenty men and two six pound caronades, and small arms.

*August 1st.*—Fine morning. Breeze strong. Found that we had made but nine miles southing since yesterday. Read prayers, and an excellent sermon of Burder's. This admirable preacher of a pure religion must have done wonders with his parishioners. I give him the credit of the manifest reform which appears to have taken place in my congregation ; he cannot be read or heard without interest and improvement. He speaks to the heart more in the eloquence of feeling than language ; but whatever he says, he strongly impresses. His sermon, on the text, " Christ is the way," is calculated to make a man a Christian, and to keep him one. On these occasions all on

board regularly attend, with three or four exceptions\*.

2nd.—I have been occupied most of this day in writing out the foregoing part of my journal, in the hope of its being conveyed to my sisters. It is inconceivable what a pleasurable interest I take in it. Since this notion has come into my head, it is no longer to me a mere dry record of each day's progress, and its passing events. It is my medium of communication with my dear girls; and though the voyage be barren of incidents, it will, I know, be valued as a memorial from its writer,—as a transcript of his thoughts. How often and how intensely do I think of you all!

The north star is almost invisible, and only the tail of ursa major can be seen. A breeze has split our fore-topsail, but this is a *trifle*. We are now supposed to have caught the first of the trade

---

\* I cannot too strongly applaud the conduct of Mr. Moore in this respect; nor too warmly recommend the imitation of it to others similarly circumstanced. Every person, however humble in ability, may be the instrument of incalculable benefit. Let him take a few Bibles, Prayer-books, and well-selected volumes of sermons; let him produce and use them on the sabbath, and in his own little circle keep the day holy. He may at first meet with indifference or opposition, but let him persevere, as in the instances of Buchanan and Henry Martin, and he will at length be listened to, with reverential attention. Sailors have strong impressions of religion; and the ocean is a scene, of all others, the most likely to excite the adoration of Him, "who weigheth the waters by measure."

wind, which blows strong from S. E., and must, in consequence, shape our course towards South America, and we experience more motion than at any other period of our voyage. The vessel lies more on her side, which renders our position, either sitting or standing, an embarrassing one. Every thing is kept on the table by means of raised ledges, placed at equal distances. The sun is strong, but the breeze cooling. Thermometer  $79^{\circ}$  to  $82^{\circ}$ , lat.  $4^{\circ} 39'$ .

Several of Mother Carey's chickens were flying near the vessel at dusk. Certes if they go home to sleep, it will be late bed-time with them, for we are several hundred miles from land.

I take a great deal of exercise on deck, swinging on the ropes by the hands, legs, arms, and jumping over one of my feet held in the opposite hand. These gymnasticising exercises are of great benefit to me. You may tell this to Huguenin when you see him. Several of the passengers, and sailors also, amused themselves to a very late hour with different sorts of sports, hunt the slipper, and other playful exercises, with which they were much delighted. I took a pump bath at midnight, and found the water rather cold.

5th.—Approaching the line; certainly *the line of heat* is in lat.  $10^{\circ}$  or  $11^{\circ}$ , for our weather here, lat.  $2^{\circ} 11'$ , is quite cool.

6th.—We have crossed the line without wit-

nessing any of those wonderful sights which landsmen are taught to expect. There was neither a well-stretched line in the air, nor a white streak on the waters; nor did the needle tremble, nor the ship groan, nor the heavens give any peculiar indications. We sailed along at the rate of four knots an hour, on a cool and pleasant day, over an unruffled sea; and it was only by observation at noon that we ascertained our having crossed the mystic boundary. We are promised a visit at night from Neptune, on passing his peculiar territory.

9th.—Last night I got a view, for the first time, of the Southern Cross, a beautiful constellation, which corresponds with the Plough or Bear of the northern hemisphere; its shaft points to the south pole, and at midnight it is vertical. All the stars here appear with greater splendour than in our part of the northern hemisphere, the sky being cloudless, and the atmosphere clear. After admiring the brilliancy of Venus until eleven o'clock, I bathed, and retired to rest about midnight. I have not told you exactly how my day passes on board:—We rise about six; and breakfast on coffee, biscuit, and cold meat, or fried pork and rice, about eight; sometimes on stirabout and molasses: after breakfast, I read and write (occasionally going on deck to see any novelty which may occur there)



and at three sit down to a very fair dinner with the captain, the first and second mates, and Messrs. Codd and Nolan. We take tea at candle-light (the sun setting at six), and from seven until bed-time, I usually remain on deck, star-gazing, gymnasticising on the ropes, or chatting with some of the passengers.

Before leaving Europe, I was cautioned against heavy night dews, but I have not experienced any vapours, though remaining on deck until nearly twelve every night, and frequently standing for a considerable time *en chemise* after a cold bath. Time passes slowly with some persons on board, but with me its course appears rapid; and when I look back, I am surprised at the lapse of days since I left land.

18th.—Last night the appearance of Jupiter, when rising above the horizon, was so singular, that many persons (thinking of pirates) cried out in alarm, “a light, a light;” his rapid ascent in the heavens, however, soon put an end to conjectures.

Our course is now S.E. direct for the Cape, —many birds have been flying about us.

20th.—What a busy day this is with you—preparing for grouse shooting. Shall I ever shoot grouse with you again? As I have nothing else to do, I must scribble poetry on the occasion.

## FIRST DAY OF THE SHOOTING SEASON.—AT SEA.

Oh, what a spirit-stirring day  
 For me would this have been,  
 Had I on land been doomed to stay;  
 But here, how changed the scene!

I tread not now the heathy plains,  
 Nor climb the mountain's side,  
 Where undisturb'd the moor-cock reigns  
 In solitary pride.

My path is on the trackless wave,  
 And through the billowy foam;  
 Where ocean birds together have  
 Their cradle and their tomb.

But mem'ry dwells on that dear sound  
 The cheerful, *welcome home*;  
 When amidst friends those joys were found  
 Which ne'er again may come.

But, home and friends, where shall I find?—  
 Henceforth 'twill be my part  
 To seek for friends within my mind;  
 My home must be my heart.

*Sept. 1st.*—While fishing with a piece of pork as bait, a Cape pigeon caught the hook in his bill and was pulled up. Porpoises, and an albatross, about the ship. Weather cold, like the month of March. Thermometer 52°. Drew the *quilt* over me for the first time during many weeks.

*11th.*—A heavenly day, like one of our autumn days; but rather too calm for our impatience—the Cape being within less than a

hundred miles. Great cleaning out of the ship preparatory to our arrival.

13th.—The breeze has, most provokingly, freshened to a gale, and we are obliged to keep off land, for there is no shelter from this wind in Table Bay. It is most tantalising to be within view of the light-house and flag-staff on the mountain, and then to recede from them.

14th.—After a storm last night, which to my inexperienced eye was sufficiently terrible, the wind has moderated, and we are now standing in for the Bay; straining our eyes to have the first peep of African scenery, turning the glass towards every flat-roofed villa as it appears on the shore, and gazing as we near the quays, at the great teams of twelve or fourteen oxen drawing waggons.       \*       \*       \*

          \*       \*       \*       \*       \*

20th.—We are now under weigh for Australia. I have brought some cuttings of vine and fig trees in earth, and pumpkin and orange seeds.

25th.—A week has now elapsed since we left Cape Town, and we have made no progress, but have rather gone backwards; so difficult is it sometimes to weather the Cape. We may now have to run to the fortieth degree of south latitude before we meet with a west wind.

I have stumbled upon a pamphlet written by Dr. Macartney, 1810, on the luminous appearance of the sea. He describes one luminous

animalcule like a shrimp,—so far his microscopic observations agree with mine ; but he does not conjecture (as I do) that the small globules are the spawn, which afterwards assume the tad-pole, and subsequently the fish shape. I wish I had seen his pamphlet before, as I should then have observed more closely.

28th.—What a night has passed ! Incessant thunder, lightning, and wind, accompanied with torrents of rain and hailstones of a very large size. Sleep was out of the question. I was frequently on deck to observe the vivid flashes of electric matter, which illuminated the ocean around ; and on one or two occasions I saw a steady light, which sailors call Jack-o'-the-Lan-tern, continuing at least ten minutes on the mast-head. During this storm we sailed ten knots an hour, shipping a tremendous sea occasionally.

Do you ever think of me ? I hope you do, at least in your morning and evening petitions to the Throne of Grace. I think of you, and pray for you every time that I offer up my prayers and thanksgivings for myself.

October 1st.—I have been in a poetical mood again ; yet dissatisfied with the labours of my brain. Last night (when I wrote them) I thought my lines sublime,

“ But in the morning cool reflection came.”

To-day I think some of them bordering on the ridiculous. Between the two, you know, there is

but a step; you shall have them, however, but please to bear situation and circumstances in mind. I was alone on the deck on a beautiful moon-shining night, when the poetical afflatus seized me. Whatever the character of the poetry may be, these lines are faithfully indicative of my feelings, and of the communion which subsists between my head and heart :—

I gaze on the moon—I gaze on the moon—  
As at home I have gazed of yore ;  
But the change of scene, and the space between,  
Make me feel the *same* pleasure no more.

For it brings to mind the land of my birth,  
And it painfully brings to mind  
My solitude here, and the friends so dear,  
For ever perhaps left behind.

And it brings to mind, oh it brings to mind,  
Happy hours that are now gone by ;  
The blush and the smile, as I gazed the while  
On the light of a soft blue eye.

And it makes me feel, oh it makes me feel,  
The loss of those earlier years ;  
When hearts are so light, and hope is so bright,  
And nothing but pleasure appears.

Then the moon looks lone, and I feel as lone,  
How could it otherwise be ?  
There's nothing on *high*, but a starless sky,  
And *here* there's nothing but sea.

And that passing cloud, and that passing cloud,  
Whose gloom as it low'rs, I now mark,  
Is the transient shade which sorrow has made,  
When the prospect around looks dark.

It brightens again, it brightens again,  
And how clear is the blue serene !  
The cloud passes on, the shadow is gone,  
Was ever so placid a scene ?

So is it with hope,—thus is it with hope,  
For hope seems to me like the moon ;  
Its look is so soft, it changes so oft,  
And it darkens and brightens as soon.

Hope saves from despair,—hope conquers despair,  
And enlivens the surrounding gloom :  
Its abiding ray fadeth not away,  
But *shines*—even on to the tomb.

Then rouse thee my heart, and cheer thee my heart,  
And let all thy hopes still be green ;  
For oh ! thou shalt not by friends be forgot,  
Though distance and time intervene.

But prepare to meet,—be ready to meet  
What good or what ill may befall,  
Whatever betide, be it still thy pride  
To be calm and resign'd in all.

Are you as the dead ? has all pleasure fled ?  
Are there *no* joys for those who roam ?  
Can no place on earth but the place of our birth  
Be called by the sweet name of *home* ?

From its native clay,—from its native clay  
We transplant to a genial soil  
The vigorous shoot, lo ! it soon takes root,  
And will amply repay our toil.

Though it pine at first—though it pine at first  
With regret for its parent bed,  
The bright sunny clime, and propitious time,  
Will quickly raise up its fallen head.

Friends hallow a spot—Love hallows a spot,  
 But bliss is to no spot confin'd ;  
 'Tis here, or 'tis there, 'tis every where,  
 Its dwelling place is in the mind.

Let us make a home,—let us make a home,  
 Wherever our lot may be cast ;  
 Let us new friends find, bear the old in mind,  
 And cherish the days that are past.

So shine on sweet hope, and shine bright sweet hope,  
 And if the sky darken,—why then,  
 We'll look for the ray of that promis'd day,  
 When friends may all meet once again.

5th.—Nothing worthy of note has occurred of late ; we have fine weather, a smooth sea, and a favourable wind.

13th.—I have my expectations excited, from hearing that a great flaming cross is frequently seen in our present position, lat.  $38^{\circ}$ , long.  $67^{\circ} 35'$ , at midnight. I have seen it, but with great disappointment.

It is composed of many stars, of no extraordinary brilliancy. The sky has not been clear for some time ; and it was only last night that I saw it in its erect position at midnight.

I also saw the Pleiades, a beautiful constellation, the sight of which (so powerful is the association of ideas) led my thoughts far, far from the present scene to our little study and boyish days, when we conned over Virgil and Ovid ; and, heartily sick of their Pleiades and "Nimbosus Orion," wished them at the bottom of the sea. I little

thought then, that it would be my subsequent fate to gaze on these beautiful constellations on the wide ocean.

I need not recal to you that exquisite expression of Job, which may challenge comparison with any of the ancient poets, "Canst thou bind the sweet influences of Pleiades or loose the bands of Orion?"—a passage which Milton has borrowed and appropriated,—

"The Pleiades before him danced,  
Shedding sweet influence."

You see I am not totally idle, but make some use of the few books which I have packed up.

18th.—I have had a dream of home, and here you have a poetical version of my visions of the night:—

When gentle slumber seals my eyes,  
And dreamy thoughts are free as air,  
Back, back to home my fancy flies,  
And fondly, fondly lingers there.

Methought, that when some years had pass'd,  
I trod again my native shore,  
And forward still my looks were cast,  
Till I had reach'd my home once more.

But over all there seem'd a change—  
Save over my own mind alone;  
And there were many faces strange  
Amidst a few I once had known.

I miss'd the old sequester'd spot,  
The fav'rite walk, the well-known tree;  
And, somehow, flowers and shrubs were not  
Where mem'ry said they ought to be.



And faithful unchanged mem'ry sought  
 Familiar looks—alas! in vain—  
 Time had been there, and time had brought  
 New scenes, new faces, in his train.

Can this, I said, can this be home—  
 That home I've longed so much to see?  
 In such brief space do changes come,  
 Or is the change alone in me?

Thus o'er my spirit in suspense  
 A melancholy musing stole,—  
 'Till music, waking my wrapp'd sense,  
 Told the glad secret to my soul—

That *one* still liv'd, whose lyre gave out  
 A long, a well-remember'd sound,  
 Which, like a talisman, dispell'd my doubt:  
 Then—not till then—my Home was found.

20th.—We have been watching the land (which is about thirty miles distant) since dinner-time, and are now running parallel with it; we hope to anchor to-morrow.

I have been searching for my tents and iron bedsteads, and getting my packages into order.

This voyage, which once appeared interminable, now draws to a close; and though fifteen weeks have elapsed since I left Dublin, the time has passed more rapidly and agreeably than I could have believed to be possible. I do not recollect to have been so fat at any other period of my life, and am in perfect health. Even my cheeks have plumped out, and I have no longer the sallow visage of the student, but the ruddy

hue of the farmer. A freedom from anxiety of mind, and professional occupation, may probably be the cause of my being so *fat*; however, an active life of rural industry will soon rid me of superabundant flesh.

29th.—There has been almost a dead calm since yesterday, until within the last two hours. We are now advancing towards the coast, which has an undulating and very pleasing appearance, like gentlemen's parks. We can plainly distinguish clumps of trees on the low lands in front; and in the back grounds a range of hills, apparently twenty-five or thirty miles distant. All our people are in high spirits but we are obliged to put about, and stand off, as our charts are not perfect enough to assure us of our proper landing-place.

30th.—We are now at anchor in Cockburn Sound, near Garden Island; which, except for the greenness and the foliage, does not deserve the appellation. Why it is so called I cannot conjecture, unless it be according to the accommodating rule, which so satisfactorily accounts for every misnomer, best known by its example—*lucus a non lucendo*. The soil on the beach is sandy; the view around is beautiful, the land having sufficient diversities.

The entrance to Cockburn Sound is attended with some difficulty to strangers; but new charts have been sent home, laying down all the sound-

ings, &c. &c. It is a fine harbour *when you reach it.*

*Nov. 9th.*—More than a week has passed since I came here; but such a week! So many new scenes, new people, new languages and manners, incidents and accidents!

I have waited on the governor; been at the head of the Swan River, and in a conflict with a tribe of natives; accompanied a party, which chased them for miles through the woods, where they had been making merry with plunder; and after seeing one native shot, and three wounded, assisted in bringing seven prisoners to Perth. To-morrow I shall set off for the Canning River, my object being to procure a grant at once, if possible, as I do not wish to be at unnecessary expense in keeping my people. Letty has come ashore with a hen under each arm; and James has brought the sow, sheep, and goat. The weather is roastingly hot, but not oppressive.

And now safe on shore,

“Prima mei pars est exacta laboris,”

## THE COLONY.

APPEARANCE OF THE COUNTRY—CONFLICT WITH THE NATIVES—  
THE NATIVES DESCRIBED—DIFFICULTIES OF SOME OF THE  
SETTLERS—PROSPECTS OF THE COLONY—THE SCENERY ON  
CANNING RIVER—FREEMANTLE—HINTS TO SETTLERS—NECES-  
SARIES AND SUPERFLUITIES—OBTAIN A GRANT AT THE HEAD  
OF THE SWAN RIVER.

*Nov. 12th, 1830.*

I SEIZE the opportunity of almost the first leisure moment which I have had here, to give you a hurried account of my proceedings and prospects up to this time.

We anchored in Cockburn Sound on this day fortnight, and on the evening of the same day landed on Garden Island, where the first thing that struck us was the very unpromising appearance of the soil (which seemed to be little else than white sand) and the singularity of tolerably good crops, or rather patches, of peas, barley, turnips, radishes, &c. which it produced.

On Sunday we reached the mainland, where (on the beach) the embryo town of Freemantle is situated.

I was anxious to see the governor without loss of time, and therefore proceeded to Perth, about twelve miles up the river, in the boat of Mr. Brown, the Colonial Secretary, from whom I have received the kindest and most hospitable attention. In consequence of some depredations committed by the natives on the upper part of Swan River, Mr. Brown proceeded thither, accompanied by a few soldiers, and I took the advantage of going with him to that part of the country, but have not now time to give you a minute detail of our proceedings: some natives were detected in the act of plundering a house, and enjoying the spoil, and seven were taken and brought prisoners to Perth, where they were kindly treated and dismissed after a detention of a few days.

It is hoped that the lesson taught them on this occasion, the superiority they must have perceived in our weapons, strength, and co-operation, with their subsequent kind treatment, may prevent any further annoyance from them. They are rather active than strong, slender in the limbs, but broad in the chest; and though generally far from being well-looking, yet not deserving the epithet of *hideous*, which has been applied to them; and they are quick of apprehension, and capable of reflecting on the difference between our manners and customs and their own, in a degree which you would scarcely expect. At King George's Sound, they call their wives by a

name which sounds to us appropriate, "yoke," yokefellow. I have sketched for you Too-legat Wanty and his "yoke," who was in rather an interesting state when we saw her, which she intimated to us with very little reserve.

At her back she carries the bag containing some roots, which they eat after roasting and pounding. At King George's Sound, it is said that they never molest white people, but they have deadly feuds with each other, tribe against tribe; if one person be killed, or even dies a natural death, it is an ordinance of their religion to sacrifice a victim from another tribe, just to preserve *the balance of power*.

One of our natives slept with his head on my knee in the boat, but not till he had asked permission, which I gave him; first taking the precaution of spreading paper on my trowsers, to save them from the grease and red earth with which his hair was dressed.

I next went up the Canning River, my object being to obtain a grant without loss of time, and to take my people to it, but I find it difficult to get one. The only land available for present purposes is on and near the banks of the rivers: all this is now allotted on both sides of each river almost to their source; but an offer is frequently made of giving one half to a new settler, on condition of his performing the location duties sufficient to secure the whole. I have an offer of

this kind on the banks of the Swan River, and think of accepting it ; if I do not, I must explore beyond the mountains, where a fine country is said to have been discovered twenty-five miles to the south, where three rivers fall into a lake, and thence into the sea, or still farther to the south to Port Vasse, or Cape Leschenhault ; or it may be to Cape Lewin, where the soil and climate are good and the harbour is excellent. These, of course, are only my unarranged notions on the subject, not grounded yet on any firm foundation ; for I have not been long enough here to form any decided opinion as to soil, situation, or probabilities. In general, the higher you go up the Swan River, which is an estuary, the better is the adjacent land, which is overflowed in winter, and like all alluvial soil productive for summer pasture. As to Mr. Fraser's account, I have no doubt it is strictly true, respecting every part which he describes ; but it would not be safe to rely upon it, as a general description of the land.

Much disappointment has been felt by many over-sanguine persons here, who thought they had nothing more to do than scratch the ground and sow. But there are many difficulties to surmount ; the proper seasons for sowing are scarcely yet ascertained ; from this circumstance many have failed altogether in their crops, which throws them on their capital for another year, and but

few have been able to raise as much as is sufficient for their own consumption.

I have seen two or three good fields of wheat, maize, barley, oats, and rye, and I have every reason to believe that crops of all sorts will thrive here with moderate care; melons, cucumbers, pumpkins, cabbages, peas, and all the ordinary garden vegetables, have been already produced.

Our vessel was the first that came during the season; and being just in time, every thing sold enormously high. If this colony be supported as it ought, during the trying period of its infancy, I am convinced, from all I hear, that it will succeed. Cockburn Sound is an excellent harbour in winter; Gage's Roads in summer. From the nature of the coast, the climate, and the relative circumstances of the interior, it is unlikely that another harbour so good will be found in this quarter. All the rivers in this neighbourhood seem to be small, and to have bar harbours. A river has lately been discovered, behind the range of hills running to the north-west. Beyond those hills, the interior, for forty or fifty miles back, has an undulating appearance, and is then succeeded by plains good for pasture. On this side, the only good pasture is on the alluvial flats, which are flooded every winter. Those who speculate on keeping large flocks speak of going next summer over the hills, which are of trifling elevation, and present no serious obstacle to carriage, or the for-



mation of roads, when the colony is strong enough to make or require them. The expense and labour of conveying goods up the river, at present, is very great; boats in summer must be unloaded, and dragged over the flats, but above these the water is deep, and the navigation only occasionally impeded by fallen trees, which may easily be removed. Every settler should have a boat, and learn how to manage it.

*Friday, 19th.*—I wrote the foregoing observations at the house of Captain Irwin, from whom I have received the greatest kindness. I have since been up the Canning River, about a mile above the navigable part, to look at some grants which are undisposed of. The country there is beautiful, covered or rather studded with magnificent trees, but the 'substratum' is ironstone, the clay strongly impregnated with it, hard and unmanageable, and having very little grass on it, which (for immediate use) is the chief requisite. Besides, the river there, is salt in summer, and fresh water it is difficult to find. The Canning (with this exception) is located up to the mountains. It is intended to build a town near its source, where there is some fine ground.

About Freemantle, where I am now sitting in my tent, the land is mere sand; but we must not judge of this by similar-looking places at *home*, for all vegetables flourish on it, and cattle thrive on the herbage, scanty though it be.

Until you have gone above Perth, the ground is of the same nature ; it changes to alluvial flats, and the higher grounds consist of sandy loam of different qualities. Brick and pottery clay is abundant, and they are making bricks in many places, which will soon supersede wood as a material for building. I saw a wooden house burned down some nights ago, and have therefore a dread of one—a mud edifice for me. The great mistake committed by settlers has been bringing too many articles of machinery and implements, which are not necessary or suited to the soil. Some ploughs, cars, saws, and mill machinery are lying even yet on the beach.

If I were coming again, I should content myself with grubbing hoes, felling axes (mine are too long and narrow), spades, some kitchen utensils, plenty of provisions, and a hammock ; these would do to begin with. Those who brought great apparatus and stock were sadly burdened with the first, and did not know what to do with the second. Many of their cattle ran into the bush and were lost, and some of the more delicate died from want of care or fodder on ship-board, or on landing. The emigrant should not encumber himself with any superfluous articles ; let him bring plenty of provisions and a few common utensils for cooking them ; no cattle from England ; very little furniture, and that of the strongest and most portable kind ; no large

packages ; every thing in stout square boxes, not exceeding 2 cwt. each ; and he should keep as much of his property as possible in cash, which in many cases clears 25 per cent.

25th.—I have taken half of Mr. Lamb's grant ; it is nearly at the head of the navigable part of the Swan River : how it may look after enduring the heat of the summer I know not, but it had a fine appearance when I was there. It is singular that it is just about the spot where we had the skirmish with the natives. There are several very respectable persons settled near it, and there is now a party of soldiers stationed there. Since I wrote the first part of this, two vessels have arrived from Van Diemen's Land, with provisions, which has caused a most beneficial effect on prices ;—other ships are expected soon, so that we shall have plenty ; but it is evident that, until the colony is able to produce something substantial for its support, we must depend on contingencies and have a fluctuating market. That it *will* succeed ultimately, I have not the least doubt ; but we shall have two or three years of hard struggling to contend with. The servants I brought with me are all happy, contented, and healthy, and it must be my care to keep them so. As to myself, with the exception of several scrapes, cuts and bruises on my hands from dragging, carrying, and other works (for I have not spared myself), I never was in better health—thanks to

the beneficent Giver of it. I have not as yet suffered any difficulty or privation, which I think worthy of mentioning. I hope to get all my luggage and articles to Perth on Monday; paying 5*l.* for taking one boat-load so far, and I must then push them over the flats.

I have endeavoured (without regard to the connexion of my sentences, which I have not time to reduce into order) to give you my first impressions, neither disguising nor overlooking any thing,—so far as it goes, good and bad, you may depend upon the accuracy of my report. When leisure and time may permit, I shall write more satisfactorily.

Yours ever,  
&c. &c.

## THE COLONY.

CAPABILITIES OF THE COLONY—SCARCITY OF CATTLE—KANGAROO  
HUNT—LOSES HIMSELF IN THE BUSH—SITES OF NEW TOWNS  
—ASPECT OF THE COUNTRY—MARKETS.

8th December, 1830.

THIS letter goes by the *Cruiser* to India, whence there may be an early opportunity for its transmission to England ; so that, in all probability, it may reach you before my last of the 23rd of November, which was accompanied by the continuation of my journal, and contained my first impressions of this place. I should not be sorry if it were so, for I can write now rather more satisfactorily with respect to several matters. I have since agreed with Mr. Lamb to take the half of his grant on the left bank of the Swan River, on condition of expending so much on my part as will secure the whole. I walked all over the front ground near the river, some days since, and it seems to be good. It is generally considered so, and above the average of neighbouring land ; but I cannot speak more particularly at present.

A vein of good soil has been discovered on the banks of a river called the Avon, behind the hills,

on which many of the settlers are selecting their grants. I have got one upon that river towards the south.

All the lands up the Swan and Canning have been long since granted ; but some of the grantees have left the colony, and their lands may be resumed by the Government, if not occupied, at the expiration of the year. I have spoken to some practical farmers, who have not the slightest doubt that the colony possesses every *capability*, both for agriculture and grazing ; and though the pasture lands on this side of the hills are not extensive, there is an unlimited tract behind them, and at no great distance.

Two or three vessels have come in since I first wrote, and the prices of provisions and clothing are now moderate.

Cattle are very dear, though we daily expect arrivals from Hobart Town. Good cows are as high as 25*l*. though some have been purchased for 12*l*. It is not advisable to bring stock from England ; freight and casualties make them come too expensive. A vessel is to sail for the Mauritius in about three weeks, when I hope to write more fully.

At present, I am unwilling to take the responsibility of advising any one to come out ; but I have met with no difficulties for which I was not prepared.

I went out some days ago, about four miles off, to hunt kangaroos ; we huntsmen saw five, but the dogs never got sight of them. I went astray returning, and no wonder, for nothing is more perplexing than walking in the bush ; you have no object to steer by, except your shadow or a compass ; the one is always changing with the day, and the other may mislead, unless you keep your eye constantly upon it. The country is most singular, but does not possess those features of extreme interest which I expected ; there is (as far as I have seen) great sameness in the scenery, and several parties which have been beyond the mountains (perhaps to the distance of 100 miles) report the scenery to be of the same character,—undulating ground and extensive plains ; but no very striking object, no large rivers, no lakes of any extent,—and the low lands are subject to floods in winter. The river on which I have my grant from Government has been but lately discovered, and is not, I believe, navigable ; it runs strongly in winter, and forms a series of pools and shallows in summer ; its course is to the north-west, the more northerly part being nearest the Swan River, but the better ground along its banks lying more to the south ; on this has been laid out the site of three towns ; Northam—said to be about twenty-eight miles from the head of the Swan ; York—ten miles farther, and Beverly—(close to which is

my grant), ten miles more ; this I know only from an unfinished map.

We are to have a monthly conveyance by boat for our goods, up to the head of the river. A store has been established at Guildford, a few miles from this, where we are sure of procuring a temporary supply of the necessaries of life, when it may be inconvenient to obtain them from Perth. Prices are now moderate. I have bought sugar at sevenpence, rice at twopence-halfpenny, and coffee at eightpence per pound, arrack at six shillings and sixpence per gallon : rum is a dearer article, generally twelve shillings and sixpence per gallon ; it is allowed as a daily ration to the servants, who have got into the habit of demanding it, and grumbling if refused.

Ever yours,  
&c. &c.



## THE COLONY.

SOIL OF THE COUNTRY—ALLUVIAL FLATS—VEGETABLE PRODUCTIONS—THE GRASS TREE—QUADRUPEDS—BIRDS AND FISH—CLIMATE—INSECTS—RAPIDITY OF PRODUCTION AND DECAY—REPTILES—THE NATIVES—THE SETTLERS—JURISDICTION OF THE GOVERNOR—CATTLE—THE AUTHOR'S HOUSE DESCRIBED.

*March 5th, 1831.*

It would be impossible to give you such a description of this country as would apply to all parts of it. The general character is that of an interesting landscape, rather than of sublime or grand scenery. There is every variety of soil, from white sand, to the deep black vegetable alluvial mould, each variety, generally speaking, having something of peculiar production, either of tree, shrub, herb, or flower. On the white sand, the Australian mahogany is found in great abundance, and of excellent quality; on the clay grounds, the red and blue gum trees appear; and sandy soils produce the *Banksia* and *Protea*.

For the first fifteen miles up the river, white sands present themselves on either side with some mixture of vegetable mould. In this district, white limestone is tolerably abundant. About three miles above Perth, alluvial flats begin to

appear close to the river, and as you ascend, these become more frequent and extensive; the rising grounds change to a brown or red clay, and you lose sight of the sand, which, however, still continues to run parallel to the river, at some distance back, and thus to accompany it almost to its source; on the left bank, ascending the river behind the alluvial flats, is a border of rising ground, generally composed of a brown or red sandy loam, upon which rests a plain or high table land of stiff clay, stretching back to a considerable distance.

In many places, however, the high land rises boldly up from the river, so as to alternate with the flat on the opposite side. The alluvial flats are covered with a luxuriant crop of grasses. But on the table lands the grass is not abundant; There has now been a year's experience of the capability of the soil, and there is no doubt that it can abundantly produce any grain, fruit, vegetable, tree, or shrub, which belongs to its parallel of latitude. The sandy loam is considered the best for present purposes, the stiff clay lands being difficult to break up, and requiring more time and labour than many are willing to bestow. I have seen, within two miles of this, a fine crop of wheat grown without any manure, and with much less preparatory culture than would be required in England. This was produced on an alluvial flat, the grain being ploughed in, just before the

rains which flooded the ground; and in spring its vegetation was rapid and healthy. All sorts of garden and field vegetables thrive well, when put down in the proper season; but nothing worthy of being called fruit has as yet been discovered, if we except the zamia, which produces a nut, which the natives eat after considerable preparation by steeping in water. Tobacco, hemp, flax, eringo, celery, parsley, are indigenous. To the distant eye, the country has the appearance of being well wooded, but I should not say it was thickly timbered. In some places there are open plains, that resemble well ordered parks,—no where do you find impenetrable jungle, save in the mere swamps and the lagoons. The seemingly conflicting accounts of two, ten, one hundred, or a thousand trees to an acre, may be all true of different places, if you reckon every shrub as a tree. Take, for example, the ground where I have built: to avoid injuring the appearance of the place, I have cut down but one large tree, and not above a dozen shrubs and small trees, preferring to fell the timber necessary for building, at the distance of a quarter of a mile.

Just behind my house (on the high level land), is a plain of perhaps two hundred acres, upon which large trees are not numerous, or more than sufficient for ornament. There is one spot looking like a cleared field, of eight or nine acres, not encumbered with a single tree or shrub. In other

places a tree resembling a larch of four or five years' growth, is thinly scattered. This large plain is skirted by a thick border of red gum trees, intermixed with banksias, black wattles, and other shrubs. The ground of this border is a rich red sandy loam, very easily turned up; and here my men are breaking ground with the hoe, there being abundance of clear ground between the large trees, when the light brush wood is removed. The trees have not a very ample foliage, so that you may walk in the forest, and yet not enjoy much shade. The red gum tree resembles an old pear or cherry tree, but is of much greater dimensions. There is one beside my house, which in the winter will protect it from the fierce north-west blast.

The *Zanthorea Pastile*, or grass tree, puts me in mind of a tall black native, with a spear in his hand, ornamented with a tuft of rushes. These vary in size from those peeping over the surface to those in the swampy grounds, eight or ten feet high, with a spear equally long growing out of the stem, and bearing at the top a beautiful flower; on the spear is found an excellent, clear, transparent gum, and from the lower part of the tree oozes a black gum, which makes a powerful cement used by the natives for fastening stone heads on their hammers. The country presents an endless variety or succession of flowering trees and shrubs; but I have not seen any having much perfume.

The kangaroo has supplied food to many who were prudent or fortunate enough to provide themselves with proper dogs, such as strong greyhounds, which are here expensive and difficult to be procured, a good one costing more than 15*l*. The only other animals you meet with usually, are, the opossum, the kangaroo-rat, lizards, rats and mice, the rat not much larger than the English mouse; they are abundant and mischievous.

I have heard of emus; and have seen wild turkeys, cockatoos, parrots, pigeons, quails, pies, jays, hawks, black swans, pelicans, and a number of other birds.

This day I shot a duck. There are two kinds of them; one of which, the wood duck, alights on trees. The white cockatoos are very numerous, and now feed upon the flower of the red gum tree, which lately came into blossom. There are three or four species of the cockatoo,—white, black, grey, and black with a red tail. The parrots are small and green, the neck ornamented with a gold ring. The pigeons are beautiful, with a bronze-coloured wing. Many birds have singular calls or cries, and our crow makes a most dismal noise, terminated by a long doleful cry. The white cockatoo screams like a clucking hen disturbed from her nest, and the black one whines like a discontented pug dog. There is a bird called here the robin, like our own in its habits of familiarity, but its plumage is much more beauti-

ful; a thrush resembling the field fare; a small bird the size of a wren, but of splendid ultramarine colour. There are many other varieties, but I have not time to enumerate them.

Fish abound in the river, but without a net of peculiar construction (a trammel net) it is not easy to catch them—I have taken a few perch, however, one small turtle, and shell fish like the clam.

The climate in summer, in the middle of the day, is very warm; most agreeable in the morning and evening, cool and pleasant at night, sometimes even cold as it approaches morning. In winter, notwithstanding what has been said of it, I am told the weather is delightful—a moderate warmth during the day, and the night so cold as to make you enjoy a fire; the rains only occasional, and not of long duration.

Insects are now wonderfully numerous. Ants in great quantities and of many varieties of size and colour, from the lion ant, an inch long, to the small brown ant, which can insinuate itself into the most minute crevice. These seize upon whatever is eatable, and devour it in a short time. The ground seems alive with white ants, and the trees swarm with them inside and out; every thing here teems with life.

The principles of increase and the agents of destruction are so actively employed, that there seems to be a rapid round of production and decay, unknown to your more moderate climate.

Of snakes I have seen only two, both very small ; but my men have killed five or six, some of them three feet long : we have not heard of any injury being done by them, and in fact they do not seem to be at all dreaded.

- The natives are not so despicable a race as was at first supposed. They are active, bold, and shrewd, expert in thieving, as many (and myself among the number) have experienced ; they are courageous when attacked ; however, they are not very numerous, and we are on good terms with them. I walk occasionally to and from Perth, through the woods, alone and unarmed ; so you may perceive, from this circumstance, we are not in much dread of them\*.

Settlers are so scattered that I cannot form any correct estimate as to their numbers ; many more are expected before the expiration of the year, for the purpose of obtaining the promised grants of land ; but the good grounds in the vicinity of the Swan and Canning rivers were almost all occupied by those who had previously arrived. Endless tracts of country are now opened to new settlers, though at a greater distance.

---

\* Governor Stirling states, in his official communications, that many of the settlers had established themselves at once upon their lands, regardless of any danger from the natives, who were found to be so harmless, that single persons who had traversed the country never met with any interruption, or sustained any insult or injury at their hands.

However, it will subsequently be seen that the governor gave them too much credit for "sweet simplicity."—Ed.

The inhabitants at the Cape, at Sydney, and Hobart Town, have done every thing in their power to decry this settlement, and deter the emigrants from proceeding hither ; yet of the final success of the colony there can be no doubt.

The jurisdiction of King George's Sound has been transferred to our governor. This opens a new district for colonisation ; but there is not much fertile land, it is said, in that quarter, until you recede from the coast to the distance of twenty or thirty miles. Captain Bannister, who walked to it overland from Perth, mentions his having passed over, in his journey, about ninety miles of luxuriant pasture ground, in one continued tract, and he reports that water was procured without difficulty.

Many of my friends will be still anxious to know whether I can recommend this place for emigration. I have but as yet five months' experience of the country ; but I have observed that practical men, who have seen the ground over the mountains, are writing to their friends in England to come out.

If persons cannot remain comfortably at home, but are obliged to emigrate somewhere, I would unhesitatingly recommend this place in preference to Sydney, or Van Diemen's Land.

Our market is at present, and has been ever since the arrival of the *Cleopatra*, very well supplied with all the necessaries and many of the



luxuries of life. We have flour now, so low as threepence per pound, sugar from threepence to fivepence, coffee sevenpence, tea four shillings and sixpence, rice twopence per pound, rum six shillings per gallon, salt beef and pork about sixpence to eightpence, and fresh meat one shilling and sixpence per pound. Prices are not likely to continue so moderate during the winter. I purchased half a ton of flour some time ago at 27*l.* per ton, and must soon buy more. The difficulty of moving these things over the flats in the river is considerable, but there is a plan in progress for deepening the passage.

The natives stole two cwts. of my flour, as well as some belonging to others, on its way over the flats; they also took a bag of biscuits and some pork from my house when I was last absent.

Our greatest want at present is live stock; we have prepared a memorial to the Government at home, soliciting assistance in this particular, and undertaking to guarantee the payment of the advances.

Black cattle thrive here; English or Cape cows are the best; the latter are excellent, and may be had at the Cape very cheap; those of Van Diemen's Land are so wild, that they generally run to the bush and are lost.

It is not advisable to bring any stock from England, except perhaps a few prime sheep for breed; to a small extent sheep may be purchased

here much cheaper than they could be brought out. .

The thermometer to-day did not rise above 80°, we have had it often 110°, some days as high as 120°, but I have not on any day found the heat insupportable, even in the open air at noon. It is now (nine at night) only 66°. The seasons here differ from those at Sydney, as far as I understand them.

Before our arrival here, I speculated upon two crops in the year, which doubtless may be produced of many things ; but it must be after the ground has been well prepared, and under a more regular system of agriculture than we can practise for some time. I dare say, many who were thinking of coming out have been deterred by unfavourable accounts,—some written perhaps with sincerity and with a good deal of correctness ; but very many the result of prejudice, total ignorance of agriculture, and consequent disappointment.

In fact, many persons arrived here quite unqualified for a settler's life. The first settlers have all the difficulties to contend with. By the time other emigrants arrive, the way will have been greatly smoothed, and prices will be much lower.

I have built my house upon a rising ground which first slopes rapidly, then gently down towards the river, which here is about thirty yards wide ; smooth, clear, and without any perceptible current,

except as driven by the alternate land or sea breezes. The ground is very picturesque ; on both sides it is broken at intervals, into small rounded eminences, rising a little way back from the river, with a gradual ascent, reaching to an extensive level plain behind. It reminds me of the Thames near Richmond, and it sometimes looks not unlike *home*, and might feel so too, if my friends were with me. \* \* \* \*

When I came here there were only ten settlers on the upper part of the river,—there are now ninety-seven ; but, as I am a colonist of such recent standing, I shall not speak decidedly of the eligibility of this district as a place of emigration, but feel, from what I have seen, quite borne out in my original impression of it as a place where (even with a small capital) a settler may secure an independence, and possess, at least, the substantial comforts, if not the refined luxuries, of life.

Farewell,

Yours ever, &c.

## THE COLONY.

THE AUTHOR'S OCCUPATIONS—FROGS—HIS GARDEN—WILD TURKEYS  
—CATCHES A SNAKE AND CENTIPEDE—KANGAROO HUNT—DIS-  
APPOINTMENT—THE BOTANIC GARDENS—FARMING OCCUPATIONS  
—A STORM—PROVIDENTIAL ESCAPE—RECEIVES PACKET FROM  
HOME—VALUE OF KANGAROO DOGS—THE ANIHU—SYMPTOMS OF  
—WINTER—GREAT WANT OF STONE—LOSES HIS COW—FLOWERS  
AND SONGSTERS OF SWAN RIVER.

*May 12th.*

My last letter was broken off abruptly from the necessity of the mail being closed.

On the 4th, had the pleasure of meeting at Perth, one of a most agreeable party, Captain Mangles, who published his *Travels in Egypt*.

Any man of sense, who has travelled far and observed much, is invaluable as a companion, or as an author, particularly if he don't let the latter character absorb the agreeable qualities of the former.

The author is often too retentive of materials which he is collecting for his work, to communicate them freely, whilst the *companion*, as such, overflows with interesting and useful information.

As far as the 28th instant, my time has been

occupied in farming, gardening, &c., with a moderate attention to the larder and the *provant*\*.

I caught a couple of turtles, one but small, the other larger ; and shot a pair of ducks, all tending to our great desideratum in luxury—a supply of fresh meat. We have had some refreshing rain, but the weather is now settled again, and most charming, thermometer 66°.

The spring of grass is amazing,—everything green ; beautiful little flowers, raising their heads like snow-drops, and having very much the fragrance of the hawthorn-blossom, have sprung up in great profusion.

How often I wish that some of you were here ! for this wild life, although it has its inconveniences, has its pleasures too. I am sure you would enjoy it, if once the roughing was a little over. I have had great feasting upon fresh meat (fowls), every day for some time for myself and people : to-day I had at dinner a very large pigeon ; yesterday, a brace of wild ducks ; and the day before, a brace of parrots, and, so on,—besides greens and radishes. I feel very happy just now in every respect except my solitude. Great rumours of ship arrivals !—are they true ?—any from England ?—any letters ?

Oh ! the anxious throbbings of the emigrant's

---

\* " When a cavalier," says Dalgetty, " finds that *provant* is good and abundant, he will in my estimation do wisely to victual himself for at least three days, as there is no knowing when he may come by another."—*Legend of Montrosa*.

heart, with those he loves, far—far away, but with perhaps long letters of their affectionate remembrances on board that ship now sailing into the harbour:—alas! she is from another country.—But I must resume my diary.

*Saturday, 28th.*—The numerous frogs remind me that the moist weather and approaching winter have brought into active life an immense quantity of these creatures, some of which make a hard *co—ax, co—ax*, sort of noise, and others a most mournful and horrible bellowing, which might be mistaken for the high note of a bull: perhaps this was what frightened the French navigators\*. Planted yesterday two hundred cabbages and some lettuces in my garden: we did not get them till late, and put them in by the light of a beautiful moon. Do you take an interest in the daily labour of my garden? I hope you do, for it is to me a source of great interest and amusement. This morning I sent for my cows; the men could not succeed in bringing them. I went myself and brought the older one, and afterwards returned for the younger: I believe James and I never had so hard a piece of work in our lives; she was wild beyond belief; actually knocked him down twice, and ran at me. We

---

\* Alluding, probably, to the alarm felt by M. Bailly and his party in exploring the Swan River, on hearing a bellowing much louder than that of an ox, among the reeds on the river-side, which they attributed to some large quadruped.—*Bailly, quoted by Peron, v. i. p. 173.*—Ed.

got her home through the river, put her into a pen, and there she shall stay till she is tamed.

31st.—Some officers of the *Nimrod* paid me a visit; they had not long gone when two others came; and shortly after they had left me, a boat full of company hailed us in passing. I called on Mrs. Shaw when the family were at dinner, and sat down and stayed till the moon rose;—returned about nine o'clock. Got from Mr. Breckman's gardener some onion and carrot seeds, and sowed them in the garden, which is now pretty well filled. My peas are above ground, and all the seeds I brought with me have kept pretty well. Most lovely weather! when is this dreaded winter to come? I feel like one that holds in his breath, and collects his force to resist a shock;—making every preparation against the winter; but though this is the last day of May\*, it has been as warm as your May when you have sunshine. The mornings and evenings are cool; yet here am I, sitting with doors and windows open, feeling no cold, and not even once having a fire in my room. The thermometer is now 63° (eight o'clock in the evening). It is a delightful climate; would to God we were all settled together!—but I always check myself from saying much on this subject, until I shall have been here a full year. Those who are fond of the gaieties of a town life would not be

---

\* The reader should remember that May is a winter month in Australia.

reconciled to this place, but I greatly enjoy the quiet and peace of mind with which I am favoured.

*June 1st.*—We have had a most delightful day: this morning, soon after breakfast, some friends came to remain an hour or so with me, and two gentlemen came to dinner.

*4th.*—I am told that the Governor, Capt. Irwin, Mr. Brown, and several others, are coming up the river. This morning I found my pigs and dog busily employed in devouring a wild turkey, which had been wounded; I had no notion it was so large a bird;—it measured seven feet from tip to tip of the extended wings; the thighs like those of a lamb. My men were occupied in the distant field, trenching the wheat ground.

*5th.*—Got wheat-ground finished, and prepared ground in the garden for peas. Some wheat coming up well.

*6th.*—A boat with visitors stopped here just before breakfast, when I was out shooting. Got my chimney finished to-day, and this night had a fire for the first time; it burns well: my room looks snug and cheerful.

*7th.*—Dined to-day with Mr. Tanner, and have got some garden-seeds from him: he is to have half when they come up. I have just been calculating that since Sunday morning last I have had no fewer than twenty-one visitors. I expected the Governor, Mr. Brown, Captain Mangles, and Captain Irwin, to-day; they did not come, but



perhaps they will to-morrow. Put down peas in garden; the wheat drills up, and looking well; sky threatening; thermometer 56°.

Yesterday, it rained the greater part of the day, but cleared up in the evening: heard that the Governor and his party on horseback had come up the river on the opposite side, and returned shortly after by an intended new road, which is marked out by notched trees, near half a mile beyond this place.

9th.—Mr. B. called yesterday; took tea, and slept here, being unwilling to walk home, as the night was foggy. He wants me to sketch a plan for employing prisoners, as a working gang; the Governor being anxious to occupy them in this way, if settlers will pay a superintendant.

This day I sowed many seeds: onion, cauliflower, broccoli, endive, French sorrel, brett (a Port Louis vegetable), spinach, parsley, and three sorts of tobacco, for experiment. My garden is nearly filled, and begins to look well. Caught in the garden a beautiful snake, about eighteen inches long, with a black head and yellow body; put him into a bottle of rum, along with many other such things; he vibrated his tongue most rapidly and wickedly. Caught a centipede, nearly four inches in length, when moving my trunks to-day: it is in the bottle of *preserves* also.

Captain Mangles, R.N., Mr. Andrews, and Mr. Elliott stopped at my landing-place for a few mi-

nutes on their way up the river : they promised to call again, but, returning, shouted out, they had not time :—those whom we are most anxious to see are generally the most expeditious in their movements. This evening I took tea, sitting on my canteen, opposite a blazing fire placed on a brick hearth a little above the level of the floor : no invidious fender\* to keep my feet from receiving the benefit of the fire : neither sashes nor windows, thanks to the erratic disposition of my carpenter.

10th.—Delightful day ! I have been amusing myself in the garden, making a new bed for pumpkin, water melon, orange, lemon, and cucumber seeds ; and these I mean to cover, during the winter, from the heavy rain and frost (if there be any). John busy to-night mending his shoes ; I rummaged out bristles, awls, thread, a ladle to make wax, and cut the legs off a pair of boots for leather, which cracks so rapidly with the heat, that we wear out a pair of shoes in two or three weeks.

Captain Mangles told us yesterday that a ship had come in ; it was not known with certainty, when he came off, what ship it was.

11th.—Sat up last night sketching a plan for

---

\* Perhaps for a reason similar to that which deprived the lady of curtain-sleep.—

“ No curtained sleep had she, because  
She had no curtains to her bed.”

*Colman's Broad Grins.*

employing prisoners as a working gang. I shot a duck before breakfast, and had, very reluctantly, to swim across the river for it; found the water by no means so cold as I have often experienced in bathing at home in *summer*; on the surface it was cold, but quite agreeable at the depth of two feet. A little rain this morning, but the middle of the day as warm almost as your summer:—certainly, this is a fine climate, though rather on the warm side in summer. Shot two cockatoos, which are excellent eating. Rain commenced at one P.M., and has continued pretty constant, and sometimes heavy. River swollen fourteen inches.

12th.—Rain all day. Continued building within doors. Weather not cold, like your wet summer.

13th.—Rain has ceased. Every thing looking well in the garden; all my cabbages strong and healthy. Shot a brace of ducks, one fell in the river, had to swim for him—any thing for a fresh mess. In the evening shot a bird which some call a squeaker. Tied my two cows for an hour to feed; they become tame,—thanks to the tethers.

16th.—Nothing worth noting has occurred for the last two days. My men have been enclosing the distant field. Crows are very persevering and destructive; shot one, with its stomach full of wheat—hope to have the field finished to-morrow. Much thunder and rain on Monday night, but the weather looks settled again; we have had

nothing like winter yet. The *Stirling* has arrived; I must go down to buy a boat and other things.

17th.—Have been kangaroo hunting with young Shaw; we had three runs, but got only one brush kangaroo, about fifteen pounds' weight; I got half of it (the usual terms of hunting in company)—dined on part of it—delicious eating.

20th.—Here am I at Freemantle, after having spent the evening at the house of Mr. Leake, in company with Mr. and Mrs. M'Dermot, who have lately arrived, we had some airs sweetly played on the piano-forte by Mrs. M'Dermot, most of the music from Don Giovanni, which was a treat here. Dined yesterday with the Governor.

On looking over this, I found it an odd jumble *de omnibus rebus*, part of it being intended for my father, part for my sisters, and the rest for you. The vessel sails to-morrow for Java:

\* \* \* \* \*

22nd.—No words can express my disappointment in not receiving the letter which you had sent by Mrs. M'Dermot. They who are in the midst of society, with the constant facilities of having letters and news from their friends, have no just notion of the mortification on the non-arrival of a letter from home. The receipt of a packet is a great and happy event; its arrival an epoch, anticipated with anxiety, hailed with excitement, and referred to, as a period from which one dates the lapse of time.

I shall now give you an outline of the occurrences during my absence from Hermitage, which I left on Friday last.

Mr. Mackey and Mr. Madden, (midshipmen of H.M.S. Sulphur) drank tea and slept at my house on the night of that day, and breakfasted there next morning, and afterwards overtook me at Guildford, whence I accompanied them to Perth, where we arrived in sufficient time to dine comfortably at the mess-room. On the next day (Sunday) Captain Irwin read the morning service of the church in the hospital, and in the evening I went to the Rev. Mr. Wittenoon's church, and afterwards had the honour of dining with his Excellency the Governor, Mrs. Stirling, Captain Mangles, and some others.

Not being able to return to Freemantle on Monday, I spent a few hours agreeably at Mr. Leake's, where Mrs. M'Dermot again gratified us with some excellent music on the piano-forte, with a flute accompaniment.

28th.—I arrived at Perth after a very tedious passage of six hours, greatly fatigued, having rested the preceding night on the bare ground, —my blanket a great coat, my pillow a fishing-basket!

The four following days were passed in short and pleasant excursions from Perth, and in quiet, and yet very social, dinner parties.

July 3rd.—The Sabbath passed nearly as be-

fore. The clergyman goes on alternate Sundays to Guildford and Freemantle, and attends a Sunday School.

A botanical garden has been lately laid out here, in which I walked with the Governor and his lady, accompanied by some of my kind friends. I left Perth mounted on a small pony, which Mr. B. wishes me to take charge of; indeed change of air or of keeping seems desirable for him, as he is miserably weak and quite unable to support me for any considerable distance; but for the *honour* of the thing, I might just as well have walked. My friends bore me company for a short time, and I reached my home and indulged in a sound nap in my own bed, being the first night, except one at Captain Whitfield's, since my excursion commenced, that I had an opportunity of stretching my limbs upon any thing more luxurious than a clay floor or a chest.\*

This day I have been very busy sowing small parcels of red and white wheat (in drills), peas, beans, cabbage seeds, leeks, onions, turnips, cauliflower, mangel-wurzel, rape, radishes, mustard and cress, and had the gratification for the *first time* of eating an excellent salad, the produce of my own garden. Henceforward I calculate on a regular supply of vegetables for my solitary table\*.

---

\* Nec modicâ cœnape times olus omne patellâ.—*Horace*.  
DOYLE, JUN.

I had nearly omitted to state that on the 23rd, we had one of those storms, with the accounts of which people have been kindly endeavouring to alarm me. It certainly blew with violence, but I have been ridiculed for asserting that its force was by no means equal to that of an equinoctial gale in England. I am certain, however, that it was not. There was not a single house thrown down, nor any thatch stripped. The wind undoubtedly made a fearful roaring among the trees, and this led our Colonists to think it worse than it really was. The only accidents in consequence, of which I have heard, are the driving ashore of a small vessel of 35 tons (which was afterwards got off without damage), and the loss of a boat.\*

4th.—The weather is most delightful, like that in April or May at home—when is the winter to come? our shortest day is past. During my absence about half an acre was broken up for Indian corn. My potatoes,—me miserum!—have failed in a great degree; the seed was damaged, although it cost me thirty-five shillings per cwt., and now there is none to be had at any price in

---

\* How fully is Mr. Moore borne out in his just opinions, when these unimportant casualties are compared with the melancholy destruction, by the equinoctial gales and other storms of 1833, which have lined the coast of Great Britain and Ireland with innumerable and fatal wrecks, exhibiting a more extensive ruin of the seafaring interests than was ever before recollected in the memory of man.

the colony ; but we hope to have some from Van Diemen's Land before the close of the season, and I have the satisfaction of calculating, that there will be 200 acres of wheat grown this season, which will supply 800 persons with flour for one year—vide Malthus (or any other economist whom you may like better) on Food and Population. This is a great struggle for a new colony, is it not ?

5th.—We had a slight frost last night. This day I have completed the sowing of all my seeds, except that of maize (or Indian corn), and transplanted 300 cabbages, besides those which I brought from Perth, tares, flax seed, rye, castor oil seed, stones of the date tree, lucerne, red and white clover, trefoil, hay seeds, and planted five young orange trees.

9th.—After the interval of a week, I have heavy arrears to pull up, and have been interrupted this day by an incessant throng of visitors ; and now at eleven at night, I, for the first time, during this interval, find myself alone and at leisure. This day week I dined with Mr. Tanner, when a messenger came to state that Captain Irwin had arrived at my house,—of course I hurried thither, and gave him refreshment and a bed. He had come for the purpose of making preparatory arrangements for the public celebration of the church service, which we mean to have regularly at a neighbouring barrack. Twenty-eight persons,



many of them of the higher class, attended the next day; and warmly entered into Captain Irwin's object. He is a truly amiable and religious man; and interests himself most usefully for the colony, and the enjoyment of his friendship is a valuable privilege to me. We have subsequently measured the boundaries of a projected village, for which I have offered a part of my land. Young Shaw and I have been looking for kangaroos, but unsuccessfully. We have, however, obtained many varieties of beautiful plants and shrubs, and some more seeds from Mr. Tanner, who is to have half the produce.

Last Thursday was very wet, with high wind, and thunder and lightning at night. I slept very little.

On the ensuing morning, Captain Irwin came for me to accompany him to my back grounds to look for kangaroos; we were again unsuccessful. On the night of this day we had a most providential escape: my friend had put the cotton match, which we use for lighting a cigar, into his pocket, supposing it to be extinguished, but, as if purposely to convince him of his mistake, it communicated with the bed quilt, and before he awoke, set fire to it,—the blanket, sheets, and part of the mattress; his pillow actually rested against an open cask of gunpowder! When I started up, the quilt was burning up to his head. I carried out every thing in my arms, and stood in my shirt

until I had extinguished the fire. The night was very cold; so much so, that even this unexpected excitement gave me no renewal of warmth. and after a sleepless night, having talked with gratitude over our most providential escape, I arose to labour in the garden, in which I was occupied with little cessation until three o'clock, and ended the day with a most charming evening party, at Mr. Tanner's house. But the greatest event of all is to be told: a soldier has brought me from Dr. Millegan two packets of letters and newspapers (with some of my father's handwriting too), from you, dear brother. This, then, is the packet which I lamented as lost—oh the joy of receiving it! you were all well—may God be praised! Long before this time your affectionate and anxious hearts must have received tidings from your poor emigré. But to go on with my details, in each and all of which you are so intensely interested:—

On Sunday the 10th I filled, as I have so often done before, the office of chaplain to about twenty persons. On returning, still thinking of the lost packet, and home, and all its endearing associations, I found what I deemed a prize, in the present condition of my larder, in the form of a floating fish—a mullet, about two pounds weight! What a dinner I shall have! to say nothing of some young cabbages from my own garden; but, alas! without the orthodox accompaniment of bacon.

12th.—While I was reading a letter in a Derry paper, Mackey came in, and on examination recognised it as his own production, written in his boyish days to his father, or some other relative in the North of Ireland: whimsical coincidence! We remained awake almost all Thursday night in retracing recollections of our friends and contemporaries; and I read so eagerly the news in the Derry papers that I put my eyes out of writing order, and idled away the ensuing day in paying and receiving visits from a gentleman, and a lady too, who afterwards sent me an invitation to dine about two miles and a half from Hermitage, with Mr. B. Think of the dissipation of society on the Swan River! I walked to and from his house without greater inconvenience than that occasioned by the wet grass. I wish the “walking” in Ireland may be as peaceable this day. When will the dreaded winter come? \*

I went yesterday to Mr. Brown for some carrot seeds; the weather was lovely, like one of your summer days: towards evening it becomes cool, and in the morning there is some frost. Every day now my garden claims my labour: I have transplanted my young carrots, rape, cabbages, and French spinach between my wheat drills, which are eighteen inches apart; and I expect that they will all thrive, especially where manure has been supplied to them.

\*

\*

\*

\*

\*

21<sup>st</sup>.—I breakfasted this day week with Mr. M'Dermot, who lives, as a matter of temporary accommodation, at the Governor's house at Guildford. The succeeding day proved so tempestuous as to prevent me from proceeding to Freemantle. I gave Captain M. some specimens of flowering shrubs, besides a bottle full of snakes, lizards, and scorpions. On Saturday was held a meeting of our Agricultural Society, of which the Governor is patron: I shall send you a printed copy of its proceedings, and can assure you that, though not quite so imposing an association as the Highland Society of Scotland, or the late Farming Society of Ireland, it is of great consequence and utility here, where agriculture is but in an infant state, and where experiments are most important.

My cow has calved, but the "milky mother" does not yet supply me and her *other* calf with much nutriment. The calf is happily of the feminine gender: an important consideration to me.

I have been engaged in enclosing a field of about five acres, in which the garden is included: James and John are hard at it. I regret to say that my wheat has an unhealthy appearance, being of a reddish colour at the end of the blade: whether this discolouration be the effect of the frosts, or of the underground work of a wire-worm, I am not yet agriculturist enough to determine.

22<sup>nd</sup>.—Some boatmen have just brought me five cwt. of flour, a barrel of herrings, a bag of

coffee and another of rice, all necessary for my winter comforts, though of *winter* there is no appearance, neither floods nor rain: in fact the weather is delightful, and the cow seems to feel the benefit of it, if I am to judge of her increase of milk, which Letty has already churned in a small box-churn, expressly borrowed for the purpose: the result of her industry has been one pound of very rich butter.

23rd.—Laboured again at the garden, and sowed a bed of carrots and two beds of turnips, cabbages, and radishes, each bed about twelve yards in length, and one yard in breadth: transplanted peas, which were too thin in their rows. My garden is nearly full, and it affords me radishes every day for myself and my friend, Mrs. Tanner.

25th.—Yesterday I walked through the river, which was a little cold, to church, where I read the service. The congregation was respectable. I afterwards dined with Mr. Brakeman, and met an officer in the navy, who has left the Canning River to settle here; he knew our friends E. L. and his wife, and Mr. Edward Scott, the bar-rister, and this acquaintance with them at once formed a link of companionship with me.

30th.—My diary for some time past presents nothing more than a detail of work in the garden, and the cooking of a dish of greens, with observations on the weather, which has been rather windy, (accompanied by some rain) but it has now

moderated. Ah, woe is me! the calf became so weak and ill, that I have been obliged to cut its throat, — poor innocent! Some gentlemen came here, while my larder was so well supplied with veal, and did me the favour of dining and sleeping *sub tegmine*. Next day we all dined at Mr. Mackey's, across the river, where we had a noble feast of vegetables from his garden, which being on moist ground yields abundantly.

31st.—I went to bed early last night, but was deprived of my desired slumbers by the arrival of two gentlemen, who had been benighted on the river, and requested a night's lodging; they had come from the Surveyor's office on a holyday excursion. On the next night again, after I had composed myself to rest, with the expectation of taking a double dose of sleep, I was aroused by a furious barking of my dogs; up I jumped, and hearing moans of distress, commenced a search, which ended in the discovery of a drunken fellow lying in the bottom of a deep ditch: he proved to be one of Mr. Burgess's servants, who had gone up the river, got drunk *en chemin*, lost his companion (who was in a similar condition), and his way. I am in great want of a good kangaroo dog, which, besides his proper office of game-hunting, would be a watchful sentry at night: fifteen guineas are demanded for one, which is a high price; but the dog, if good, enables his owner to have a constant supply of fresh kangaroo meat,—a very material

object. No winter yet,—thermometer 62°,—fresh flowers springing up every day !

*Aug. 1st.*—The younger Mr. Burgess came this morning to tell me that his dogs had killed an old and young emu ; I hurried off with all the ardour of a young sportsman to see them ; the old one, when erect, is nearly seven feet high, and resembling the kangaroo, both being small and slender in the fore parts and heavy and strong in the hind quarters. This bird has a very gentle look, seems to feed entirely on grass, has no wings, and scarcely the indication of a pinion, for it is only six inches long, terminated by a small claw. The feathers are singular, two of them springing from one stem ; the only long ones are in the tail ; the colour is of a dark brown. I hope to send you some in a box, with other Australian curiosities. The young one is not unlike a gosling, with light coloured longitudinal stripes.

*2nd.*—An easterly wind prevails, and it has something of the sharp penetrating and drying quality which it has with you. Some complain of rheumatic tendency as a consequence of it : unaffected by it I have been rambling about on my back grounds without seeing any living thing except a solitary quail, which I did not shoot ;—game frequents swampy land, and I have none such on my back ground. This easterly wind already causes a parched appearance in the soil. Thermometer 62°, yet I have had a fire all day.

3rd.—This morning has been very warm. I shot a duck, and without hesitation jumped into the water after him: I *have* him, and shall eat him for supper; but without *peas*, which are only now coming into blossom. A moderate shower has already revived our drooping plants, and caused an agreeable change in the weather. I have found a new plant like a single wall-flower, but without perfume; and also a beautiful frog mottled with bright green,—it is already in my *bottle of preserves* for my dear sisters. Some of the day was passed in garden operations, among which transplanting cabbages, preparing for Indian corn, melons, and cucumbers, were the principal. I have one almond and five orange trees, growing very well.

4th.—Last night there were strong *symptoms* of winter; vivid lightning and cannonading peals of thunder, followed by heavy rain, which continued almost all the succeeding day; however, we had our in-door occupations. Johnny mended his shoes; James made a mud floor in the centre room, while I was building up one of the compartments which had been left unfinished until bad weather, such as we have just had, should confine us to the house, and in-door occupations.

Our building operations would be more facilitated, if we could procure stone; but there is none on the land here—not even a pebble to be flung at a bird; a benevolent action, in which



from old habit, I frequently feel a desire to indulge. My tools are suited to the nature and extent of my establishment ; every thing in this way which I brought with me is useful ; and grubbing hoes, which I did *not* bring, are indispensable. I have not used my cart or plough yet, but they will, I trust, be soon in requisition. My hand-cart is very useful ; spades, hatchets, saws, wedges, nails, metal pots for cooking, my canteen and cooking oven, I find very serviceable ; but the cooking apparatus I have not yet tried.

5th.—An unpleasant, windy, and rainy day, like some of our days at home ; and I think it worse than usual, because I am very cross and fidgetty at having lost my rest last night. You have heard of the man who, when roused from his bed to attend his sick cow, exclaimed “he’s a happy man that has no cow ;” I can sympathise with him, and fully understand his feelings, for my cow is sick, and I have been up with her half the night, and have brought her into the *next room* to sleep.

6th.—James is making a house for the cow ; the great difficulty is to find thatch. Heavy showers are frequent, yet my kind neighbour Mr. S. came to dine with me and inquire for my cow, which has eaten nothing these two days but glauber salts and aloes ;—I fear she will go.

8th.—When I was going to rest last night, a traveller came to beg a night’s lodging—granted

of course. I had just gone into bed and was very snug, when two drunken men arrived; one of them *could* not and the other *would* not go any farther, so I allowed the rascals to lie by the kitchen fire, and then obtained some sleep myself, after having removed the cow to the shed, which we had covered *pro tempore* with a tent.

11th.—A budget of news by Corporal Doherty (an Irishman to be sure) from Perth, where it appears the natives are exceedingly troublesome, and that a settler has been killed. The Governor and Captain Irwin are gone in pursuit. By one of the letters which I have received, I learn that I have been elected a member of the Institution here\*, and that we are to have a small detachment of mounted police or cavalry established near this. Government speak of sending to the Cape for horses—rather a long look out. A lovely day for vegetation, warm and damp. No flood yet.

12th.—The cow is dead! Dies atro notandus lapillo!

13th.—Cut up and salted my poor deceased companion, and made candles of the tallow. Quere, shall I make a mourning suit from the hide, which is jet black? I dined sumptuously on one of poor dear Cowsy's marrow-bones,—and now she's gone,—“marrow, bones and all.”

---

\* A kind of Literary Society.—Ed.

The weather has been so very mild that I have seldom observed the thermometer, which was at 52° at sunrise this morning, and 64° at noon in the shade; really the winter of this climate is delightful, like your charming June. The air at this moment is perfumed by a shrub resembling jessamine, bearing a yellow flower; this is the fifth odoriferous plant that I have met with; the ground is almost covered with it. I have had a disappointment in some more of my farming stock—thirteen eggs, which should have produced chickens about this time, have every one failed. I have been favoured with two new songs from birds like thrushes; the notes are not much varied, but seem rather a repetition of something corresponding with these words “come with me and let us make a nest, ah *do*,” to which the other seems to reply, “no indeed I shan’t, at least with *you*”—the last note accented.

15th.—I turn from the harmony of these charming birds to the disrespectful tones of James, who swears that he will leave me, even if I should send him to Botany Bay, and because I will not allow him to hunt the dogs after some strange cows which have wandered on my land. I do not well know what to do with him; he looks very sulky, but has commenced his work again. I laughed him into good-humour by leading him to the ditch at which he had been working, and putting a spade into his hand.

And what do you think was the reason which he assigned for not leaving me, after all?—his going away would vex *you!!!* Poor Letty has a sore throat; but a dose of *glauber* will set her all to rights again.

After breakfast I walked to Perth, which is no trifling effort—the distance being eighteen miles—and my load, a fishing-basket crammed with a change of linen, and other essentials for the comfort and ornament of the outward man: five kangaroos together, of different gradations, met me on the way; how I longed to catch them! Saw some native asparagus in the course of my walk.

My letter now draws to a close. I feel as if I were again parting from you: but I shall resume my diary, which gives me pleasing occupation, at every interval of leisure.

## THE COLONY.

SWAN RIVER FARE—SERVANTS' WAGES—PRICE OF CLOTHING, PROVISIONS, &c.—COSTUME—SINGULAR PHENOMENA—APPROACH OF SPRING—CONSTANT SUCCESSION OF FLOWERS—PROJECTED JOURNEY WITH MR. DALE—AGRICULTURAL MEETING—THE GOVERNOR'S BALL.

*Hermitage, Western Australia,  
August 19th, 1831.*

My last letter was dated from Perth, where I then was. Nothing remarkable has occurred within the last two days, except the appearance of seven spermaceti-whales from Freemantle, and that the people have been smitten with the mania of whale-fishing; but, unfortunately, there is no suitable fishing-tackle for an attack on these monsters of the deep, which would otherwise (and will at a future time) have a successful result. I have been in vain endeavouring to obtain a Perth newspaper for you, containing an account of our last agricultural meeting. I returned home, partly by boat and partly on foot, and found all well: but my young cow has become plaguily restless, and has broken away repeatedly into the bush: we have her, however, in the cow-house now.

20th.—The weather is still very fine, the temperature delightful. At this moment I am very much annoyed, and am actually writing from my bed to tell you how uncomfortable I am from an incursion of blow-flies, which have taken a fancy to my new blankets, that have been so covered by them as to require fumigation with brimstone to effect their dislodgment, and I am now bewailing the absence of my comfortable clothing.

22nd.—Dined after church-service yesterday on delicious kangaroo soup, a fine haunch of ditto, lamb, a pair of fowls, ham and sausages, turnips, lettuce, onions, fruit-pies, and plum and custard puddings. Just think of such fare on the Swan River, and confess whether your organs of taste can resist an extra humidity “from bare imagination of the feast.” You know, however, that I care little for these things, and detail them merely to show that we have not *always* hard fare here.

It falls frequently to my lot to settle disputes about boundaries: the *Dii Termini* are very troublesome divinities to me; this day I have been arbitrator in a case of this nature, besides one on a disputed point concerning a sale of horses.

I have to finish a certain memorial to the Home Government, to attend an agricultural meeting on the second of next month, and to prepare for an exploring expedition over the mountains on the fourth, and have just written

for M rs. Tanner a song about this colony, of which she wishes to send her friends a copy; but I have not time now to transcribe it, but must do so at some other time.

I have a song in my mind, suggested by that of a bird's notes; and if I can get my flute mended, shall set it for you. I mean to try the system of robbing my own potatoes, viz. taking away the large ones from the roots, which is practised here with good effect.

23rd.—You will think me a most dissipated dog when I tell you, that I have dined with the same large party three successive days!

Servants' wages are extremely high, and all work proportionably so; 2*l.* 10*s.* per month for inside servants; from 5*s.* to 7*s.* per day (without diet) for labour. At present the cultivation of new ground will not pay where there is any difficulty beyond mere ploughing, and that can only be performed in cleared flat meadows. The quantity of stock is still insufficient to support a shepherd. There are not yet more than a dozen persons possessing large flocks, but we are in daily expectation of arrivals of sheep from Van Diemen's Land. I am within the limit, when I tell you, that for even a small establishment like mine, where every thing is to be purchased, it is necessary to have between 200*l.* and 300*l.* a year.

Our means will be greater and our wants less as our gardens and crops become productive.

My stock of shoes for myself and people is already exhausted, and the price is 18s. per pair. Clothes and provisions, as in all infant societies, are of course our chief wants, but in some things *money* goes a great way. Wine, tea, and sugar, are cheap. F—— talks of sending goods here on commission—an excellent speculation; in shoes alone, a profit of 150 per cent. might be effected.

As to clothing, black and blue clothes are the most saleable. Our medical men, lawyers, clergymen, and those in mourning, as among you, wear black; and there are persons here of each of the learned professions. The Government officers and naval and military men wear blue cloth coats with gilt crown buttons, and blue frocks and trousers—on great occasions, white duck trousers; but there is some hazard in this speculation, unless on a small scale.

Substantial clothing seems to be the taste of our sensible people, who are good judges of such matters. Blue striped shirts, shoes, boots, buskins, and corduroy trousers, meet with ready sale. We are in great want of light black beaver hats, which every one who can get them wears; but we can procure no male headpieces here, except some villanous-looking silk ones of an old-fashioned shape. In the country, or in undress, little attention is paid to mere ornament; but in company, or on state occasions, we are a very well-dressed and *particular* people.



As to the ladies ;—I suppose you have hitherto been in the habit of mistaking them for Hottentot dames, and consider them suitably appareled in linsey-woolsey, or “in druggets drest of thirteen pence a yard;” but our fair ones of the upper grades are of a very different class indeed: but alas! alas! I cannot enumerate any of the thousand articles which they may wish for, from the *bustle* (no allusion to the Hottentot ladies, I assure you) to every other appendage of the person :—pray interest yourself to have a well-selected cargo sent especially to them. Among the common necessities which would sell well in this colony are starch, blue, candles of every kind, glass, *flannel*, and soap, which now brings (and sold as a special favour) 2s. 6d. a pound.

Masters here are only so in name; they are the slaves of their indentured servants. In my absence, \* \* \* does nothing, and if I speak to him,—exit in a rage. I could send him to gaol, but I do not like this extremity, and yet I cannot afford to lose the advantage of his time, and pay 30*l.*, besides diet, to another in his place. Letty, however, continues faithful.

Yesterday, after the adjustment of a boundary line between neighbours at the base of the hills, a singular circumstance occurred, when the last two trees were struck with an axe, for the purpose of making a boundary mark,—a jet d’eau issued from under a blue gum tree, and continued

running without intermission during the time of our stay,—a quarter of an hour. This water had a strong chalybeate taste. On my return, we saw some native huts and graves; I picked up a man's under jaw, and looked for a scull, but in vain. These are the remains of the native who speared James; and the grave was dug soon afterwards by Corporal Fea, who shot him. I have despatched one of my people with a venture of vegetables to the market—a hamper of cabbages, turnips, and lettuces—may success attend this grand speculation!

26th.—No intelligence of the *venture* yet. My pigs have strayed away, old and young, without leave, for two days. On this day se'n-night, our next agricultural meeting will take place, on which occasion the Governor is to give an evening party, and I believe there will be some dancing. I had no notion there would be so much society here, so much gaiety, so much dressing. I thought, in my simplicity, that I had for ever laid aside my slight shoes, silk stockings, and kid gloves; but I have been most agreeably disappointed.

Spring is coming; I heard its herald, a cuckoo, last night. The weather has been very fine, with occasional showers, and this is our winter! It is really better than our summer in Ireland. Thermometer, 64°.

62th.—No tidings of my *vegetable* servant yet;

the pigs, however, have been found, after a long search. There is now a great profusion of beautiful flowering shrubs and flowers in full bloom. The succession of them is endless; among them I must particularly notice a flower called, I believe, *Aniganthus*, which is very beautiful—it is of a greenish colour, issuing from a crimson stem; the green flowers at the top protrude like fingers or expanded honeysuckles. We have also abundance of the clematis, and another creeper of a brilliant blue. One of our grasses, now in bloom, bears a beautiful blue flower with yellow stamina, and reminds me of the star of Bethlehem, or spider lily.

28th.—James arrived here at three this morning; the venture produced 9s. 10d; he got 2s. 6d. for twelve turnips, and a high price for cabbages; but my lettuces and radishes were not in demand, Captain Irwin's gardener having previously sent a boat-load of vegetables to the market. Potatoes would have sold well, if I had them,—mine have been fourteen weeks in the ground, and are now of good size, some of them weighing a pound; I shall send a small supply on Friday next to market, and hope to get one shilling per pound. They are unfortunately of the kind called *cups*,—not good for eating,—*better for selling*.

A letter has this day reached me from Mr. Dale, the officer who is to form the settlement at York. I intend to accompany him, and shall

take a fortnight's provisions, a change of raiment, a hammock, and a cloak to sleep in. Our present intention is to make the site of York our headquarters, and to proceed from that central point four days' march up the river, the same in the opposite direction down, and the same distance eastward to the interior.

From Guildford to York is, I suppose, 50 miles; from York to Beverley 20 miles; near the latter place is my grant; so that I shall have an opportunity of seeing it, as well as so much of the interior. Expeditions, however, of this kind in perspective arrangement, are often attended with serious difficulties in actual execution. In the present case thirty persons must be supplied for eleven days with gunpowder, shot, and clothes; and we can only muster three horses for us all. Thunder and rain—a good dramatic conclusion to one day's diary.

29th.—Worked hard in the garden, planting Indian corn, transplanting mangel-wurzel, and preparing beds for rock and water melons, cucumbers and pumpkins, and sowing five different kinds of strawberry seeds, and as many sorts of gooseberry, which latter seeds will not, probably, succeed in this climate.

Letty has been preparing striped cotton shirts for my expedition, these being more suited than linen ones to our climate.

30th.—The pigs, confound them! are gone astray again.

This day I have been burning weeds for ashes, and planting maize, of which I shall have half an acre, in drills one yard asunder ; and the intervals, which will be perfectly cleared, are to be planted with turnips and cabbages.

Flax and asparagus are indigenous plants here. Of the former I have seen very fine stalks, which before the general use of cotton would have been valuable ; the asparagus is not good. I have been actively at work this day, and shall be again to-morrow, in getting in the remainder of my maize, previously to my departure. These two days have been very warm, particularly so to James, who has been fruitlessly hunting for the pigs. We shall be roasted to-morrow, if this heat continues, and all the world here is going to the ball.

*Perth, Sept. 3rd.*—I must tell you all about the *great doings* since the last entry in my logbook.

Yesterday I came down here for our market, and meeting of the Agricultural Society, and for the Governor's ball.

The brig had just arrived, bringing the first Indian invalid to our shores, Quarter Master General Colonel Hanson, and also Lord F. Beauclerk. All Perth was alive ; upwards of fifty sat down to the Agricultural dinner, at which we had (as honorary members) Lord F. Beauclerk, Col. Hanson, and Capt. Parker, R.N. And at this dinner a memorial to the Home Government was

read and approved of. It is now in course of signature, and will soon be sent home. In the evening, at the governor's house, we had 180 ladies and gentlemen!!!

The ball was kept up with the greatest spirit until six in the morning; and the dancing almost without interval—contre-dances, quadrilles, Spanish dances, and gallopades. I never before witnessed such gaiety at a ball, nor ever before danced so much in one night; four rooms and an arcade were all filled, and connected with the verandah; a superb tent was fitted up, decorated and festooned with naval flags, and in this we had supper—an elegant and abundant one. The gentlemen from India were astonished, for there they had heard the most gloomy reports; and the invalid confessed that when coming ashore he had been considering with the captain, the expediency of sending some provisions from the ship, as a preventive against starvation; his amazement at seeing ample supplies of butter, eggs, vegetables, poultry and butcher's meat, may be guessed at; he purchased freely and paid liberally; has rented a house for some time, and is now recovering; indeed he was actually frolicksome all the evening.\*

That these gentlemen should have arrived here at this critical period, when the climate is delici-

---

\* The invalid recovered his health completely. A letter from him appeared in the Ceylon paper, which may be interesting, as

ous, is considered a fortunate circumstance for the colony.

*5th.*—The Cruizer goes on Wednesday to Trincomalee, and I shall send my letter by her; when you may get it, God alone can tell; but I shall go on as before, connecting as well as I can my very rambling journal, in which I scribble down every thing as it occurs—slapdash. Thinking of home gives me strange sensations; where is my home now? \* \* \*

I am living at Captain Irvine's new house (a large brick one, with two stories and a tiled floor), which has been pretty well filled of late; its occupants being Lord F. Beaclerk, Captain Pickering, Mr. Gilbert, Doctor Littleton, the Messrs. Burgess, and myself. We hear of two vessels coming to England. I hope you have written, and perhaps sent me some shoes: for I am almost barefooted.

Yours ever,  
G. F. M.

---

it will show the impression made on Col. Hanson and his party, by their visit to the Swan River.

## THE JOURNEY.

NEW SETTLEMENT—FIRST DAY'S JOURNEY—CATCHES TWO  
LIZARDS—RESCUES A YOUNG KANGAROO—CONSTANT SUCCESSION OF HILLS—THE RIVER AVON—ASPECT OF THE COUNTRY—HILLS—PLANTS—SINGULAR CAVE—RIVER BECOMES SALT—SOIL MORE BARREN—COME TO A FRESH WATER LAKE—CAPTURE AN ANT EATER—IMPROVEMENT IN THE COUNTRY—THE RIVER BECOMES ABSORBED IN THE EARTH—RETURN TO MOUNT BAKEWELL—RESUME THE JOURNAL—SURPRISE A NATIVE FAMILY—CONTINUE THEIR JOURNEY—REACH PERTH—REFLECTIONS OF THE JOURNEY—DEPREDATIONS OF THE NATIVES—INSOLENCE OF SERVANTS—SWAN RIVER—HARVEST HOME.

*October 15th, 1831.*

You will hardly believe that I have only this night been able to seat myself at home as a resting-place since the thirtieth of August. I shall now take up my narrative from the date of the last letter.

The Governor having determined to commence a settlement on the other side of Darling Range, and several settlers being desirous to take the opportunity of going over to their respective grants, Mr. Dale, an officer in the 60th regiment, the first who had penetrated beyond the Range, was selected to point out the most direct practicable route; and it was deemed a good opportunity



to combine with the expedition an exploratory excursion for some distance in a S.S.E. and N.N.W. direction from Mount Bakewell, the centre of York district, where it was intended to form the settlement; the river Avon was supposed to run direct in this line. As the country had before been examined twenty miles up and ten miles down its stream, it was now proposed to go fifty miles in a S.S.E. and fifty miles in a N.N.W. line from Mount Bakewell, then to strike across the Darling Range to the west, until the range should be passed over, and to return home along the base of the hills: such is the outline of the instructions given by the Governor.

Many circumstances made me willingly accede to the proposal of joining the expedition. I shall give you some details of our ramble.

On Tuesday, 6th ult., we assembled at Guildford, and mustered twenty-one persons, all interested and excited by the novelty of the first expedition over the hills. Many spectators came from curiosity and gave us a convoy, the Governor himself kindly riding with us a whole day's journey, and by his presence infusing a spirit of animation into the whole party. His Excellency led the van—then came the Governor's cart drawn by five horses, followed by that of Messrs. Clarkson and Hardy drawn by two horses and two cows, and by another cart belonging to Mr. Hales drawn by two cows. The three horses

bearing our provisions and clothes in sacks, saddle-bags, and other contrivances, and numerous men on foot, brought up the rear. We crossed some wet places by laying down brushwood, and formed bridges of trees over the stream ; and after clearing away trees and all impediments, advanced seven miles to the ascent of the hills. The Governor on his departure was saluted with three hearty cheers, and we then proceeded to bivouac under a large gum tree, near which were two native huts ; and this was my first actual experience of bushing.

I found the excitement delightful, as the evening was very fine: a kangaroo was killed, a roaring fire kindled, and we enjoyed a delicious fry of steaks. Our hammocks were slung in front, from trees called blackboys, and the scene altogether was such as I thought I should never tire of ; however, when going into my hammock it fairly capsized—a moral hint that there are ups and downs in the happiest scenes ; and the cold, which was intense towards morning, gave still further evidence that perfect enjoyment is rarely to be found.

Next day, Mr. Dale and I walked forward to explore the way, and found a native path leading up the hill: when returning to breakfast a kangaroo came near us, very much to his surprise as well as ours.

After breakfast, as we set out, the day became

rainy, and the pass was rocky and difficult; so much so, that the carts could proceed only three miles. Our order of march was as follows:—Mr. Dale in advance, to ascertain the direct line and mark trees in that direction, generally accompanied by me; next came Mr. B., who had charge of the waggons, attended by a number of men having axes, &c., to clear a cart-road as near the direct line as practicable; and in this road the rest followed;—but I am going too much into *details*, and must only give you the short notes of my tablets, or else my story will extend to an unmerciful length.

Halted in the valley. Heavy rain. Found great difficulty in lighting a fire under a tree. My hammock fell in the night; all my clothes were wet, and being in dread of the falling of the tree (pleasant sensations altogether), I lay down by the fire, my head on a *soft log* and my feet to the fire; and thus I composed myself to sleep.

8th.—Started at an early hour, on a good road, through an open forest of mahogany and some blue gum trees: halted in a picturesque vale, where we had loud thunder and heavy rain,—made great fires to dry the hammocks for the night.

Next morning, the party started at half-past seven; but I remained prudently behind with several others to dry our clothes.

Here I first took notice of Mr. Dale's servant, a soldier, who was afterwards a source of great amusement to us. "Well, Sheridan, how did you pass last night?"—"Why, sir, I just lay on that 'dential spot there forenent you at the fire all night, rain or no rain; for I thought I might as well keep one side dry, any way—the side that was under me." Morning or evening, wet or dry, busy or idle, Sheridan whistled or sung incessantly: it was his duty to wheel a perambulator (an instrument for measuring distances), and off he started with it this morning, singing with stentorian voice the old drum beat, "Tither, row dow, dow, dow; and tither ither, row, dow; tither ither, row, dow."

Nothing remarkable on this day's journey. Changed our course to wind up a steep hill; and at the end of four miles and a half reached a watered valley: stopped here, and had a pleasant bivouack, about a hundred yards from a swampy stream of good water. One of the party slept in the hollowed part of a tree, and made a tent of his blanket, tied by ropes to two of the trees called blackboys.

10th.—We passed this day over a broken hilly country; where large masses of granite appeared in several places of a tabular shape. After crossing over one of those tables, alongside which ran a strong rivulet, we came to deep and rapid streams (branches of the river


Helena), and were obliged to halt until we formed a bridge. The day had been rainy, which rendered it difficult to light a fire, so that we were exceedingly uncomfortable; but the evening became moderate, and the genial warmth of a blazing fire made us soon feel comparatively happy. Here some of the party began to make small huts, like the wigwams of the natives, which often afterwards proved useful; the process of forming which is very simple. Blackboy poles are stuck in the ground, forming three-fourths of a circle, and meeting in a common point at top; these are covered with grassy tops of the blackboy: it is a good temporary shelter in rain. Next day, a sufficient bridge having been formed by placing trees and spars over the stream, we proceeded for some time over a rising ground; then descended into an extensive and rich valley, where there was good feeding for the horses, which they had not regularly had before for some days.

12th.—Crossed a more level and open country for seven miles, (which we considered great progress, having made only three or four miles each preceding day) and had a more extensive view from some of the hills. The only very attractive object was a conical sloped hill which obtained the name of Mount Dale, after our companion and leader. The appearance of the country and timber began to undergo a change; the

casuarina tree, which is somewhat like a fir, is common on the east side of the range;—halted at two, having passed some native huts without seeing the natives themselves.

14th.—Crossed good level ground, and saw fifteen kangaroos; none killed.

15th.—Passed seven native huts, and ensconced ourselves in them; ascended a hill composed of what is here called ironstone, (a red sandstone) which we imagined affected our compasses, so much so that we called this elevation Magnetic Hill;—cut some bark from a tree, which smelled like raspberry jam, and caught two lizards,—two iguanas, 14 inches long, with a purple tongue, and without a tail. One of our party killed what he called a puff adder, and a small snake; killed a kangaroo, and found its young one (a beautiful black-eyed creature) in time to rescue it from the dogs. I carried the poor thing in my pocket, and nursed it carefully; it will soon become familiar;—surprised some natives, who went off gesticulating and vociferating furiously; ascended some rising grounds, whence we had a fine view of an abrupt hill in the distance, called Cut Down Hill, and where we observed for the first time the appearance of white lime, and got sight of Mount Bakewell, which we hailed with three cheers and a volley; crossed a stream running through a very fine country, and ascended another picturesque hill, from which we had no



longer the cat-in-bag kind of prospect which had hitherto almost invariably been the case with us. Like puss in a sack, we had been endeavouring to poke out our heads, but in vain ; each hill tempted us to push onwards and upwards in hope of liberation, but we only found another and another tempting us forward to incur a fresh disappointment.

16th.—Came to another rich valley, where we caught a kangaroo ; arrived at Mount Bakewell, which is covered with long grass, principally of the *poa* species ; searched for a stream, and found the river Avon, which in some places is 40 yards in breadth, but is in this place broken into several channels ; we ascended at a steep point of the mount, which is about 1500 feet in elevation, and affords an extensive view of what appeared a level country, wooded and rich. Mount Bakewell is a combination of quartz, red sandstone, and granite ; traced out the valley of the Avon for some distance, and calculated that our view extended forty miles, in some directions, without any very striking objects, excepting a few hills of conical form rising here and there ; the soil in this district seems rich loam of a brownish hue, producing patches of grass, wherever a tree had been burnt, and flowers in great quantities, particularly everlasting pink ; and here we also found trees like the crab apple, bearing round nuts of a walnut taste in abundance, but not yet ripe.

17th.—Bathed in the Avon, and made this

a day of rest, as well as of ablution, of which the whole party were in need ; our store of linen being necessarily very limited, almost like Falstaff's—"one shirt for superfluity, and one for use,"—it became necessary to wash ; my stock was pretty large, consisting of four shirts, four pair of stockings, two pair of trousers, three pair of shoes, two coats, a large pair of worsted stockings, with leather soles, which I found very comfortable to sleep in ; a straw hat for the day, and a blue cap for the night, with the hammock, blankets, and cloak already mentioned. In fine weather we preferred strewing the tops of the grass tree, which resemble rushes, on the ground, and so sleeping with our feet to the fire. I shall give you a short account of the tract we have explored : it is a range of hilly country, about fifty miles broad in one place, over which you must pass in order to arrive at a more open, level, and grassy country, which appears to continue into the interior, and to preserve the same uniformity of character, as far as has been examined in that direction. The hills on the range are principally covered on the surface with the hard red sandstone, or ironstone already mentioned, either in lumpy fragments, or broken into coarse gravel ; in some places, granite appears in large solid masses, or hillocks ; there is a good deal of coarse herbage, but little grass, except in a few of the valleys. Many prickly shrubs abound, differing



exceedingly in general appearance, yet bearing very similar flowers, of the pea blossom in shape, and of the colour of single wallflower. There is also a profusion of what you and I would call heath; but the learned botanists assert that there is no heath in the colony—far be it from me to dispute their judgment! This is almost a forest of great mahogany and blue gum trees, which have not been seen beyond the range. The streams do not appear to flow decidedly to the east, but rather to the north and south.

In the many valleys which we saw, I doubt if the streams flow through the summer. Pools and springs may be frequent; but there are no mountains, whose summits covered with snow might furnish a regular supply of water, nor frequent rains to saturate the earth and feed its springs. The thirsty soil absorbs, and the unclouded sun of summer evaporates, the moisture in its progress; and this, I take it, is the solution of the apparent paradox, with respect to rivers—that they are sometimes greater at their source than at their mouth. Such is the state of the river in *summer*; but what must it be in winter, when every valley and ravine pours forth its tributary streams into one common channel, the sole outlet of the accumulated waters of an extensive district? The Avon, through which I walked (first tucking my trousers up to my knee), seems the only artery for the collected waters of a line of 150 miles

which we traced ; and yet we did not reach its source.       \*       \*       \*       \*

Dampier, and subsequently King, observed the great fluctuations of tides on this coast (I forget at what time of the year) ; if it was in our winter months, their observations would tend to corroborate the opinion, that a large river debouches there. But this is a long and dull digression to you.

Deeming it expedient to give the horses another day's rest, we went without them, on a little excursion of six or seven miles, to look at Mr. Dale's grant, and on our way passed a hut, in which five of the natives concealed themselves ; saw some turkeys ; bathed in the Avon, in which we observed something stirring, which we conjectured to be a platypus, but naturalists have not yet ascertained that it exists here.

Returned by the river on the plain, and noticed a kind of thorn—a species, I think of the *Mespilus* ; and a shrubby tree, bearing fruit like the sloe. Dined on kangaroo stew. My young pet, poor "Hop," looks sickly, and will probably die.

19th.—We have changed our station, to the place where it was intended that the nucleus of the settlement should be formed. I found many burrows, like badger earths ; and shot two ducks, and as many cockatoos.

20th.—Poor little kangaroo has died ; it was a pretty affectionate creature, hopped after me wherever I went, knew my voice, and slept

in my bosom. I was sorry for it, and buried it. Set out on our expedition southward, the party consisting of Mr. Dale, Mr. Thompson, myself, and Sheridan, mounted on horses in rather an odd way. Those which Sheridan and I had were without saddles, which had been left behind ; we had for substitutes our cloaks doubled under us, with rope stirrups, and in this way we rode 300 miles !! Mr. Dale's horse was the only one properly equipped. Mr. Thompson rode his own horse, which had a pad on him ; and each of us carried his proportion of provisions as well as his clothes, in saddle bags or other contrivances, with his gun slung across his shoulder. We passed over a beautiful country for seven miles, and halted during the middle of the day in a picturesque valley, in which we saw a singular cavern, which had been discovered the preceding year ; it is a large mass of granite, forming the abrupt side of a hill on one part of the valley, and appearing as if the outer side wall of the cave had fallen away, and had left its length exposed ; its extreme end is a round figure, supposed to represent the sun, with the impressions of open hands round it. It appeared to us as if the rock had been covered with reddish pigment, and that the impressions had been formed by the friction of a stone on the rock. The roof is covered with what looks like the remains of broken swallows' or hornets' nests. This cave is supposed to have

been a place of worship ; yet I know not why, as the natives do not appear to have any object of veneration, nor is there any indication of a path leading to it.—Made by our estimation thirteen miles, and halted near a small stream to make a stew of our cockatoos, but found a grievous want of our plates, which had been left at York, from a prudential desire to lighten our baggage ; we had to make use in their stead of flat stones.

21st.—Breakfasted at daylight, and traversed some beautiful pasture country to the site of Beverley (twenty miles). Went up a hill—fine view—and *went down again*. Former excursions had terminated here ; and the country was supposed to improve towards the south—here it is not good.

Touched upon the river again, and halted at noon to refresh. Walked across the bed of the river, which was dry, and ascended till we came to a deep pool, or *reach*, as it is called here, which proved to be salt ; and no fresh water was to be had for our horses or ourselves ; exceedingly puzzled, as the river was running fresh and strong where we had crossed it. The land here is of poor quality ; coarse herbage—hard, barren-looking plains of whitish clay, covered with white gum trees, having a rusty tinge on the bark. Saw a native skulking away ; and had many a fruitless search after kangaroos. Saw a beautiful animal ; but, as it escaped into

the hollow of a tree, could not ascertain whether it was a species of squirrel, weazel, or wild cat. Entertained great apprehensions of not finding water at night ; but found a fresh pool at last. Soil worse and worse : rather melancholy, remembering that my grant is situated somewhere on this day's progress.

22nd.—Started at seven A.M. ; came to a long, deep, and narrow lake of fresh water, four miles in length, and eighty or a hundred yards in breadth, with an amazing number of ducks on it. Sheridan's calculation was quite Irish—"a thousand, sir, a hundred thousand, would'nt be missed out of them." Dale shot a black swan, and I swam for it, and tried the depth in several places, which I ascertained to be about six feet. The soil about it is indifferent. On its margin are samphire and the Hottentot fig (a species of sedum), which gives no indication of fresh water running into the lake. Met with a large native dog, and chased another little animal, such as had escaped from us yesterday, into a hollow tree, where we captured it ; from the length of its tongue, and other circumstances, we conjecture that it is an *ant-eater*—its colour yellowish, barred with black and white streaks across the hinder part of the back ; its length about twelve inches. Found some water in pools and streams running eastward and the soil improving, but of sandy quality.

23rd.—The country improves. We met seven natives, who drew up in some surprise at the sight of four men on horseback—perhaps the first Europeans they had seen: we had just before disturbed an emu, of which they seemed to be in chase. At noon, having travelled twelve miles, we halted in a fine valley, with plenty of grass for our horses; and having now made sixty miles in a S.S.E. line, we were, to our regret, obliged to return. Turned N.N.W.; ascended a hill, which afforded an extensive view to the eastward of a level country; but undulating to the south. Here were pools of water courses and trees, which are supposed to be casuarinas and acacias; but neither mahogany nor gum trees. Saw two emus, many kangaroos, and shot a brace of cockatoos, which made no insignificant appearance at our evening meal; and we turned into our hammocks at nine o'clock.

24th.—Up at day-break, and followed the course of a considerable stream—probably the Avon: determined not to lose sight of it, and passed a waterfall, which rolled six feet over a granite rock, through a falling ground, with buttercups on its surface, and the acacia, bearing flowers like the laburnum. There are many bare downs visible from a hill near this, with green patches here and there.

25th.—Found that one of our horses had broken loose in the night, and had some trouble

and difficulty in catching him. Passed rapidly over a bare tract, with here and there a white gum tree creeping like a ghost through the vistas. Found the running water in the river to be fresh; but that standing in the pools, brackish. Followed the river, looking for its connexion with the fresh water lake; but could not find it: at length discovered the head of a salt water lake. It appears that the stream which we had followed for forty miles had ceased to flow, and become absorbed by the earth: this is one of the puzzles of the country.

A river runs fresh to a certain point, where it terminates; and if you trace its bed for one hundred yards, you find it occupied by a salt water lake, without any apparent outlet: some miles further down, we found a long and deep lake in the reach of the river quite fresh again!

This day we had the last of our rice with a loin of pork, washed down with a glass of *spicee* grog; the only new delicacy we could command.

26th.—Our provisions being almost gone, we breakfasted on the *dust* of biscuit, soaked in tea; which was a slender preparation for the ensuing fatigue of following the river's course for eight or nine miles to the spot where it disappears above the salt water lake. We contrived, however, to make out a dinner of cockatoos and the remains of the pork, with greens of the *carduus* or sow-thistle. Took a short

march in a westerly direction, to examine another stream, which proved to be the Avon, flowing strongly and deeply in some places, through tolerably verdant banks.

It now appears, that all former observations as to the eligibility of location here, were upon mistaken grounds; and that the line must be changed. We wished to trace this line further; but neither time nor the state of our provisions permitted us to do so: turning, therefore, towards Mount Bakewell, we made a push to reach it by sunset, in which we happily succeeded and enjoyed our tea and a good night's rest.

27th.—This day we recruited; repaired and washed our clothes and ourselves in the river, which had fallen fourteen inches. Missed our dog "Fly," which has not returned.

28th.—Took out all the dogs in the settlement to look for a kangaroo; but without success.

29th.—Fly has come to us again. Mr. Johnston, who has charge of the government settlers, having furnished us with twelve pounds of biscuit, to enable us to return and trace that branch of the Avon which we had so recently left, we started for the point of our former resting-place, and there surprised a native family, consisting of a man, woman, girl, and infant, who raised a sad outcry, although we used the most conciliating tones and gestures. As we rode away, the man set fire to the top of the grass trees,



either as a signal to other natives, or for the purpose of terrifying our horses ; probably with the first object, as we soon afterwards saw two responding fires. Here we took our bearings, and saw, at a considerable distance, Cut Down Hill.

The stream at this spot is fresh, strong, and deep: the soil of middling quality. We fired seven shots at game ; but dined on salt pork. Came to a better tract, near or about which my grant may be supposed to lie—not far from a rising ground called Mount Shole, from the likeness which it is supposed to bear to the bald head of a gentleman of that name. The plains are of stiff clay of different colours, with some varieties of sandy loam. Here the river dividing into two branches, we had to choose one which runs westerly : we followed until we arrived at a wet valley, not unlike that near the “ Echo\*,” and as full of springs.

Turned homewards by a tract more distant from the river, in hopes of discovering better land ; but it proved to be miserably bad—of white sand, bearing the mahogany tree—which satisfied us that we had again arrived at the Darling Range: soon afterwards, however, we passed through a valley of better quality behind Mount Shole, where we bivouacked, having first shot two cockatoos for supper. This day we saw several huts.

---

\* In the county of Wicklow, Ireland.

*Oct. 1st.*—Proceeded farther in a N. N. E. course, through very bad land, mere sand; and at noon reached a rich valley, but not well watered. We here saw many kangaroos, and one native, skulking behind a tree; and heard the screaming of native women and boys. As we approached the settlement, several of these people scampered off, uttering a word which sounded like "*hunnyan*;" and we ascertained, subsequently, that a great number of them had been at the settlement the day before, with green boughs (we hope emblematic of peace) in their hands.

*3rd.*—At eight o'clock A.M. we proceeded on an excursion from Mount Bakewell, N. N. W. Very fine land on Mr. Thompson's grant. Beyond Mount Mackie, fell in with some natives, who called to us frequently "*coo—oo*," and as soon as we had acknowledged the invitation, two of them (one of whom Dobair recognised to have seen several times before) threw down their spears, and approached us with a friendly manner, as if glad to see us; we shook hands, and then parted: but on halting for bivouac, we heard several advancing, hallooing for some time, and then preserving silence; we did not deem it prudent to encourage their familiarities. On the ensuing day (*Oct. 4th.*), anticipating an early visit from them and an attack on our provisions (of which we had a very limited allowance), we hastened our

preparations; but had scarcely commenced breakfast, when they began to collect in considerable numbers; so that we packed up rather precipitately. Dale, having a servant to arrange for him, had finished his breakfast—I had swallowed half mine—Thompson had scarcely tasted his—and poor Sheridan had got none. The manner of these people (who advanced in little detachments, old men and boys among them) was, however, friendly. Some of them sat down beside us; some remained at different distances, according to the signals which we made them; and none of them appeared to have any arms. Curiosity seemed to be their only motive in remaining with us: there were thirty-one altogether; among whom we did not perceive either of the two men who had been present on the previous evening. Having vainly endeavoured to support a conversation with them, we shook hands and took leave, and proceeded to a deep and broad reach of the river, through a picturesque country, with high hills rising abruptly from each side. Here I shot two ducks, and swam for them.

5th.—Anxious about water, but did not discover any; and at sunset halted to hold a council of war. My proposal to look for water was rejected; we were all somewhat in the blues, our horses being knocked up, and ourselves excessively thirsty; but the indefatigable Sheridan

seizing his gun, went off to reconnoitre, and soon returned in great glee, with the agreeable intelligence that at a short distance there was a swamp, and water of course, not ten yards off. Made a famous dinner of ducks, and slept on the ground all night—and slept well.

*6th.*—Conjecturing that this is probably identical with the Swan River, we advanced over a hilly and barren country, and again heard the natives. After crossing a very rocky district, the country changed its character, and we suddenly found ourselves on a promontory, abruptly sinking into a large and beautiful valley.

This view elevated our spirits again ; “Worcestershire,” cried one ; “Shropshire,” cried another ; “Kilkenny for ever,” roared out Sheridan. Headlong we rushed into the valley, through grass to the horses’ knees, hoping to find the river ; but this valley proved to be only an extensive swamp of soil not so good as it appeared at a distance from the point of our bivouack. We, however, had the satisfaction of observing symptoms of cows, which appeared to have gone further into the interior. We examined our charts, and felt confident that the Avon and the Swan are identical.

After a march of five miles across the swamp, and over a bare and sandy soil, and having reached our N.N.W. limit, we turned east, and crossed a flat sandy tract, surrounded by hills ;

pushed on for a valley, and on reaching it, found that we had almost imperceptibly crossed the Darling Range. From a high hill we got an open view of the plain studded over (in one direction) with lakes, which we supposed to be salt ; the plain seems barren and sandy, and the only attractive object towards the sea, was a double-topped hill, about sixteen miles distant. Halted for the day, after a ride of five hours and a half near a running stream, which we fortunately found, having feared that we should not have met one nearer than that which is called Lennard's, twelve miles distant : must soon satisfy our conjectures about the Swan River. While we were at dinner, a native dog came up, and gnawed some bones within ten yards of us ; Dale fired, but missed the poor animal.

*7th.*—Arrived at land much dug by the natives, several of whom we heard, but they in general kept out of view ; reached Lennard's brook, which at once struck us all as being the Avon. This we had much difficulty in crossing, as it is deep and strong in current, but we walked through it three or four miles higher up the river. Rich grasses grow on the lands here.

Two natives, immediately succeeded by others, joined us in a friendly way, but we did not think it wise to eat in their presence, especially as they seemed very desirous that we should waive all ceremony and do so ; we cannot well understand

them yet ; on seeing us prepare to depart, they called to others, who came in groups, until they amounted to twenty-eight merry looking fellows, who accompanied us in a friendly manner for some miles ; one of them begged for a few hairs of my horse's mane, which he seemed to prize exceedingly. These people appeared to have painted themselves fresh for the visit ; and if we could judge from their anxiously pointing in a particular direction, they invited us to take a lunch at their village ; however, we went in a line precisely opposite. Soon afterwards, finding ourselves perplexed in the mazes of a swamp, we began to think that we should have taken their advice, and that the exclamation of " Bogh" was kindly meant to indicate some bridge or ford higher up ; at last, however, we got out of the swamp ; crossed a sandy country ; saw many tracts of natives ; halted at a good grassy stream ; drank tea, and went to sleep.

8th.—Continued our progress at a rapid pace over a plain of white clay, which produced white and red gum trees ; halted, and refreshed ourselves at Ellen's brook ; broiled our slices of pork at the fire on the end of a long stick ; forward again ; had a view of a limestone vein two miles broad, and dined at Mr. Bull's, where I met Mr. Macleod of the 63d, and several other gentlemen ; at night Messrs. Dale and Mackie accompanied me to my own habitation, where I once more got into bed

with my clothes off, for the first time during six weeks ; and will you believe that I did not sleep half as well this night, as when I had been stretched on rushes in the open air ? I was occupied with the workings of my own brain, and thinking "murders sleep." On the ensuing morning we went to Guildford ; waited on the Governor ; presented our report, and then proceeded to Perth under a drenching rain ; thus terminated our expedition. Just think, although it took place during what is supposed to be part of our winter or beginning of spring ; it never interrupted our sleeping in the bush and remaining in the open air for so many weeks without suffering even from a cold in the head ; the fact is, the weather, with the exception of the two or three first days, was very pleasant, like May or June in the old country. Several observations occurred to me at different times, on the particular nature and character of the country the trees and shrubs, flowers, grass, &c., which I intended to have thrown together in this letter ; but I shall refrain, and sum up the results of my exploration in a few brief and general remarks. Of flowers there is a great profusion in all directions ; the ground in some places is covered with them, but the variety is not great, at least so it occurred to me ; we had not leisure to examine large quantities of chrysanthemum, daisies, geraniums, a green tendril with a pink flower, and another splendid flower, grow-

ing like bunches of violets close to the ground. There are many flowering shrubs. Of birds we saw no great variety ; mocking birds, paroquets, larks, and warblers, but none very beautiful. I have mentioned already all the other animals which we obtained sight of, except some reptiles—viz. three or four snakes. As to the nature of the soil, the salt district may at some future period become valuable, but it is not useful for present purpose ; there is a great deal of light sandy land, and also of stiff clayey soil, which requires, in the language of holy writ, to be *subdued*, before it becomes in a state to receive seed.

Upon a former occasion, Mr. Dale had been fifty miles farther into the interior, which he describes to be similar to what we passed, undulating and grassy, in such a direction as would seem to indicate a continuation of the saltish land, which we observed in an E.S.E. direction. Some time hence it may afford an interesting excursion to follow the river down from whence we left it, and identify it with Lennard's brook (if it be the same), and trace it to the sea ; this brook has been on several occasions visited by persons looking for stray cattle, and on one occasion by Messrs. Dale and Lennard, who never dreamed of it being the Avon ; but thinking the land good, Mr. Lennard applied for a grant in that district, and it has been called by his name ever since. A singularity was observed there, which is not



yet accounted for; namely, that the river appeared to flow into a large lake on the plain, from which no current in any direction was perceptible. However, they were not then thinking much about the matter, and may have overlooked some outlet near or through the doubled hill adjacent. \* \* \* \*

It is only now that I have been able to finish these random notes (brief and hasty as they are), having written a little now and again, as opportunity permitted; and on looking over them, I have often to pick up, as my grandmother would say, "my dropped stitches;" a reference to them (keep all my letters and journals for me) may one day or other amuse and interest us at the fire side, if it shall please God that, among the changes and chances of this mortal life, we shall ever meet again.

On my arrival at home, I was treated with a number of very dismal stories.—the sow had devoured nine chickens and several eggs; the bell was lost from the goat's neck; many things were going to waste in the garden; and many other such drawbacks, lest I should feel myself too comfortable on my return. \* \* \*

*Oct. 17th.*—Gardening\*.

*18th.*—Had my potatoes dug this morning; I have about 3 cwt., which is good produce; for

---

\* I shall henceforward prune or cut away altogether the details of horticultural operations; interesting as they might be to many readers.—Ed.

although I purchased 1 cwt. for seed, price thirty-five shillings, but a small portion of it was in a fit state for planting; I believe that only one tenth of the sets grew, so that from ten pounds I had 3 cwt.; where they did grow, they would bear comparison with any of our crops at home, and this is saying much for vegetation here; our usual bargain is to give them and seeds of all kinds, on condition of getting half the produce. I have this day given Mr. Tanner sixteen pounds for this con-sid-e-ra-ti-on, and I intend to trade a good deal in this primitive kind of way with some of my neighbours, who have soils different in quality from mine, and we thus assist each other. For twenty pounds of potatoes I received, as I was starting on my late expedition, twenty shillings—a great price, you will say.

There has been seasonable rain this day, which has been of service to some turnips and cauliflowers, which I transplanted early in the morning on the potato ground. I have found—not a mare's nest—but a hen's nest, with fourteen eggs, which I have removed with Dame Partlet herself to an appropriate incubation lodge, snugly placed among the grass-tree tops; as a set off against this profitable discovery, I have to state the loss of a full-grown chicken barbarously devoured by my sow.

In my list of births I have to enter two kids, but both of the wrong sort, and three kittens; and

though last, not least in importance, six young pigs farrowed in the bush, and were discovered with much trouble. I have now eleven pigs, but it is difficult to procure food for them at present, and I am, in consequence of the difficulty, obliged to give them biscuit and flour mixed with greens, *viz.* sow thistles and turnip tops.

26th.—The beautiful picture of the hen sitting upon her eggs has now vanished ; one of the dogs devoured them all this morning,—I hope they will make him very bilious, the abominable brute ! I learn that during my absence the river rose considerably, and flooded the low ground beside the well ; the tremendous floods of winter have ended in this !

27th.—Broke up a considerable quantity of ground at the well, and planted upwards of one hundred yards of potatoes in drills. If these succeed, I shall have had two crops of the same kind within one year. My other vegetables have multiplied so that I know not what to do with them. The walnuts, however, have totally failed, and I have only eight out of fifty almond trees, and but one healthy-looking orange tree ; strawberries, raspberries, gooseberries, all failures.

28th.—Despatched James this day with potatoes, cauliflowers, turnips, and cabbages, to market. A servant of the Governor passed to-day, and told a fine budget of news, about an attack of the natives on the Government House. I do not

believe it; but the natives have undoubtedly made sad havoc among the flocks of sheep in the neighbourhood; they took eleven from Mr. Brown, nay worse, speared his cow, and afterwards being fired at for this offence, came stealthily and killed his shepherd; and as a grand finale, drove away no fewer than sixty-seven sheep, belonging to Mr. Bull, of which, though hotly pursued, they slaughtered forty-seven, *en chemin faisant*. These wholesale doings must be checked by the presence of a body of yeoman cavalry, when horses can be procured, which it is the intention of the government to supply to those persons who shall enrol themselves. I intend to serve either as a private or an officer, I care not which. Additional magistrates have been appointed since I was here, in order to act with the military on any sudden emergency; and a party of soldiers has been stationed on the hills at the head of the Swan—as the upper part of the navigable river is called; all these matters have occurred during my absence.

A ship soon goes to Van Diemen's Land, and possibly this letter may go that way. We have not had any arrival from England this long time. I am anxiously expecting news from you, besides shoes, my last pair of which I have this day put on.

The Governor and Mrs. Stirling have come down to the river and gone on board the Sulphur, which is going to King George's Island. \*      \*

30th.—Sixteen months have elapsed since I left Dublin, and precisely a year from the day of my arrival here; within that little year what changes at home! what a change in myself! what a change in my own people! \* \* \*

I met Captain Ellis (the brother of the master in chancery) the other day at a mess dinner in Perth. On my return home, I began to cut hay in partnership with Mr. B.—This mem. should have come in before—but it is all the same.

After dinner on this same anniversary day of my arrival, I went to examine Captain Irwin's grounds and gardens, and gave him fifteen pounds of potatoes; took tea at Mr. Burges's and returned at night; on the opposite side of the river, shouted for my boat, "A boat, a boat unto the ferry," but all my people were asleep, so that I was obliged to swim for it; the water was then rather cool, though in the middle of the day it is warm.

31st.—I this day opened my last cask of Sherlock's pork; it has kept perfectly sweet, and would now bring a very high price here. Perhaps I am the only person in possession of one cask. Ten guineas per barrel have been paid for Irish pork, and Mr. Labertouche must have made a considerable profit by sending his vessel here always at this time or a little before it.

My outfield of wheat is almost a failure, but wherever there were ashes a good patch appears.

Half an acre of my Indian corn looks only middling, but will probably improve; Swedish turnips, rape, and mangel-wurzel look well; every kitchen vegetable is promising.

In removing some barrels from the house, I found them filled with white ants, which had reduced the bottom of the vessel (an American flour cask) to a substance of extreme tenuity, as thin as a card.

Have got a "whisper" that one of my servants means to make battle to get another half year taken from his indentures, but I shall kick most manfully against this.

*Nov. 1st.*—Killed a great number of white ants, which are extraordinary creatures, the most important looking things, and yet they perpetrate much mischief, carrying on their depredations in secret, and making their imperceptible approaches under the screen of a covered way. Opened my front window, which has a blackboy lattice, for the first time this day since the natives threw the spear; I am making a linen blind for it,—very grand all this!

I am at a sad loss for furniture, having scarcely a table, chair, press or shelf, except what I brought with me, and I have no *doors*—mere *contrivances* in place of them. More of servants' whims! I have just heard of one who demands four glasses of rum per day! Really there is no enduring the insolence of this class here; they

soon find out their value, and act accordingly. Any one bringing out servants should accurately enumerate in their indentures every article, and show much of it each should get. Many, who on landing would have been startled at the idea of taking four glasses of spirits every day, soon reconcile themselves to this excess, if they be indulged by their masters: in laborious and warm work, however, such as mowing, a large allowance of grog is not unreasonable.

I exchanged two pair of small linen trousers (which had been made for the boy who came out with me) for a cock of hay, and have a grand project in my head of bartering some chickens (when hatched) for a kid which one of my neighbours *expects* soon to have born to him. \* \* \*

4th.—I am helping Mackie to cut an avenue from his place to mine; many settlers are doing the same kind of thing, which makes our houses appear much closer than we before supposed.

James brought me home a turtle yesterday, and to-day another, which he found in the grass, where they had been depositing their eggs; their weight is four pounds each, and one had sixteen eggs with remarkably hard shells. Found a pretty rail, shaped like ours, but handsomely freckled; and a young wagtail, which has as varied a style of singing as it has various names, being called, besides the name just stated, razor-grinder, and superb warbler. Mr. B. called to

purchase the single Cape sheep (for which I had twelve months ago given two sheep) for the sum of 3*l*.

6*th*.—Day cold, wet, and stormy—good for the garden, but not for the hay. As we had so little rain during the winter, it is possible that we may now have frequent showers. I cannot go to church.

10*th*.—James at work mowing. Made two covered sheds and pig yards. Thermometer 50° at seven in the morning. Fished for *cobblers* in the evening. The warbler sings its night-song. Fine weather. Rumour that two ships have arrived.

12*th*.—Hay-making—five cocks saved. Our Irish servants are beginning to be just as saucy as the English ones, who expect to live here as well as their masters did at home; they talk of having meat and beer three times a day! The vessels have arrived from *Java*, with pork, rice, and sugar.

14*th*.—Gave a kitten to Mr. Brockman; little as you may think of such a donation, let me tell you that a guinea has been given here for one. I have got some weighty mahogany from a sawyer to make a box and bedstead. Ten other chickens this day; we have now twenty-four chickens and seven hens. \* \* \*

19*th*.—Returned from Perth and Freemantle. Purchased flour at 7*d*. per pound, and American



pork at 8*l.* per cask,—what a price your Irish pork and butter, leather, and shoes, would produce here! No shoes in the whole colony, except a few made in India, not worth a farthing. Another sow has farrowed in the bush; only four youngsters alive—how provoking!

23*rd.*—Purchased a cow for 2*l.* 10*s.* My stock of black cattle now consists of ten, great and small, with a prospect of increase. Heard that many settlers are expected, and, consequently, that our land will rise in value. Busy all day ricking my hay, which the men carried in a sort of handbarrow: there are four tons yet remaining in the field, and the quantity in rick is ten tons. Transplanted celery early in the morning.

25*th.*—This has been a very scorching day, hotter than yesterday, when I was an hour in the water, cutting, sawing, and raising stumps of trees. Thermometer 90° in my room. Johnny has gone to Guildford for 2 cwt. of wheat for the pigs; this with garden vegetables will keep them in condition. James (not in the sulks at present) has been mowing in the distant field.

27*th.*—A great change in the weather; it being now cloudy and threatening rain, with high wind. Black servants, I find, are very serviceable in this colony; on them we must eventually depend for labour, as we can never afford to pay English servants the high wages they expect, besides feeding them so well. The black

fellows receive little more than rice—their simple diet.

This is an excellent settlement for labourers, if they would honestly preserve their engagements. Government seem desirous to establish a colony on the most thrifty scale, and every part of it should be uniform and consistent with the general plan. If an officer holding a high office under government receives but 300*l.* a year, it is out of all proportion to give from 24*l.* to 36*l.* a year, and diet, to a menial. We are in great want of stock, and have been wofully disappointed at not having an expected supply from Van Diemen's Land. The plan of purchasing (at a dear rate too) from each other is doing nothing.

30*th.*—I took Mackie down the river in my boat this morning at day-light, and returned before my people were stirring, and then commenced hoeing my Indian corn with a three-pronged hoe.

Dec. 1*st.*—For the first time during a long period my people are employed in labour at the house, and thatching a shed for the cow. Discovered numberless grubs at the root of the Indian corn, to which they do infinite mischief, concealing themselves by day in the ground, and marauding at night. Thermometer 72° at two P.M.

2*nd.*—One of our agricultural meetings was held this day, only fourteen members, out of forty-five, were present; our discussions were

interesting. Another (special) meeting is to be held after the Governor's return from King George's Sound, to consider in what form our memorial, which has not been yet forwarded, should be put.

I exhibited a sample of turnips in a garden at the York settlement, was present at the admission of three new members, and dined with the society at our head inn on a good dinner with a pint of wine—bill five shillings.

4th.—On the morning of this day I came to Mr. B., a new settler, in time for family worship, and in the evening went to Mr. W.'s, where we had a clergyman for the evening service.

I have just heard of a tree which is at Freemantle, bearing fruit which answers for preserves and pies; it is said to resemble an apple, with a thick pulp and rough kernel. Hay-rick completely finished. Our wheat was cut during my absence; it was a small patch, but yielded well, and would have been *admirable*, but for the trespasses of cows and pigs; indeed, there was more on this patch in the garden than on the two acres, to which the pigs unfortunately found their way, and where they spent many of their leisure hours, while we thought they were at home. There is, however, excellent wheat this season in the colony. Would that I had some one interested in my welfare to assist me here! my men are careless of every thing not

directly relating to their own advantage. I cannot well attend to gardening, farming, fishing, hunting, grazing, fencing, building, boating, exploring, and marketing.

After the expiration of the time which my servants have to remain with me, I should be glad to have others bound for five years, and would advance their passage money, giving them 5*l.* a year with clothes and diet, or 10*l.* a year without clothing; but retaining in my hands their wages until the passage money be cleared, and with a contract that their servitude should continue until this debt be fully discharged—a bonus of two glasses of rum per day. Mr. B. is advancing the passage money to servants, and giving 10*l.* for the first year, and 40*l.* for each of the two next; repaying himself the money advanced. I want a carpenter sadly, but must wait until I become (if ever) rich enough to employ one; until then, I must make my own doors and window shutters, be they ever so rude.

On the lower part of my meadow flat there is a hollow, with water in it during winter; it is now dry from evaporation, and become a rich compost, which I have dug up and planted with potatoes.

6*th.*—The young sow has six young ones: I have now twenty-two, old and young; and all, except one, are the offspring of the sow which I

bought out of the Cleopatra, besides six which  
I sold.       \*       \*       \*       \*

If you have not written by the mail which is at Sydney, how I shall be disappointed! Always recollect that mails are made up for this, periodically, and sent *viâ* Sydney, the Cape, or India, far more frequently than by direct conveyance. If you wish to send a package (*shoes*, for instance), you must send it direct: post pay your letters to London, whence they will be forwarded at a very cheap rate. I still am of opinion that O. would do well here; the way is now smoothed for him, and a well-managed dairy would yield him ample means of livelihood. He should purchase cows at the Cape. This day I got 3*l.* for my Cape sheep; at Van Diemen's Land one could be purchased for 5*s.*, and at the Cape (*fat*) for 6*s.*

7*th.*—Great visitings among the neighbouring servants; seven or eight of them patrolling about; and all this is sure to end in drunkenness and mischief—they talk of forming a *club*! They have too much control over their masters already, and club-law would be a terrible exercise and increase of their power.

The indefatigable little warbler, or razor-grinder, is singing its sweet notes at nine o'clock p.m., by beautiful moonlight; it is a very fearless little bird, associating with all the farm and domestic animals, watching attentively for flies,

at which it springs with unerring aim, twittering out every now and then, by way of interlude or for the sake of good digestion, some of its sweetest notes.

9th.—Had a harvest-home, or *churn*, as it is here termed, this roasting day—I fear there is little *butter* in the *churn* for me. I shall have nearly as much produce from about twenty square yards in the *garden*, as from the *tillage farm* of two acres. One of our most experienced farmers has assured me, that it will not answer to cultivate on an extended scale, under the existing circumstances of the colony, from the dearness of labour &c.: three acres altogether, will be the maximum of my tillage. Summer is our worst season, as vegetation on the dry grounds is then at a stand, and there are few facilities for irrigation. Nine months of our year are like your best summers, and the remaining three are very warm; a land breeze, however, springs up every night at about ten o'clock, and blows very fresh, making a grand roaring in the trees. Thermometer now (nine o'clock P.M.) 84°—was 94° at two.

10th.—Pigs, pigs, pigs—an addition of six—total twenty-eight.

I wrote shortly after my arrival here, recommending a speculation in slop clothes, Irish pork, and butter; if a cargo of it had arrived here about or before this time, it would have been

very profitable to the owners. There has been no butter—any price could have been got for it. Pork, as I have already stated, has been selling for ten guineas per barrel; porter would also sell well.

I am sorry to state that two men were drowned in Melville Water last Tuesday, in consequence of intoxication—the bane of this country as of Ireland. I have been threshing to-day with new (patent it ought to be) machinery, viz., the bars of a ladder. The grain is good, but the head is small. More pigs to-day—total 32. They are a very troublesome stock.

Killed two cockatoos at one shot, and caught a small turtle. After these exploits, I tried to make a door, and with much labour planed one side, and shall put it up in this state to-morrow. Time is so precious that I cannot afford any portion of it for planing the other side.

I find that a surprising number of persons on their way to this settlement have been frightened out of their intentions by the people at the *Cape*, who seem to act as if they thought every injury which they inflict on us were a positive gain to themselves. Some people (whom we are much better without) have left this place without giving it a fair trial. We want quiet, hard-working, practical people—not gentlemen, nor adventurers: by *gentlemen*, here, I mean those who consider themselves degraded by pursuing any useful occu-

pation. Let such stay away : better to have their room than their company.

I have finished my door, and actually ornamented the show side with the aid of a bead-plane ; and ground some of my own wheat in my steel mill, which grinds well and fast. I had been apprehensive on finding my store of flour so low, but now I have as much as relieves me from all danger of want. Flour is at present 7*d.* per pound ; but the usual price, when there is a supply from the Cape or Van Diemen's Land, is 3*d.* per pound.

Towards this morning I was aroused by the sound of a boat, in which E—— arrived, on his way to Mr. Tanner's to parade the soldiers there, in order to recognise some who had committed an outrage. He and Mr. Dale took beds with me. This making of beds must surprise you,—I managed it easily enough ; having three mattresses, we have only to stretch one for each guest on the floor, with sheets and blankets. The colonising system (like "misery,") "makes us acquainted with strange beds" as well as with "strange bed-fellows."

I could not hang my new door—reason why—the door-posts are crooked. I shall have sad and warm work at them. Ther. 90°.

How different my rural life from that which I had imagined it would be ! Instead of being demi-savage and romantic, it is civilised (often cere-



monious) and uniform ; with less of privation and much more of occupation for mind and body than I had anticipated. But where are all the flocks and herds?—Where?

It cost me 32*l.* to get a cow and calf, and the cow is dead. Sheep are 3*l.* each ; so that it would take all my capital to possess a flock—even less than the patriarch's—such as would afford the keeping of a shepherd. From one sow I have had thirty pigs—the only stock which has multiplied with me—and a much larger number I could not support. It is easy for a person at home to say, “ You can keep pigs and poultry without limit as to numbers,” but they must be fed in summer at considerable expense ; and, as our fences are generally bad, the pigs eat down the wheat and destroy the gardens, and the poultry soon devour their own value in grain. These are among our checks ; however, I am giving you the worst side of the picture—the features of the reversed one you will trace through the sketching lines of my whole journal.

The truth is, I hate high colouring in these cases, which may mislead, and therefore strip the portraiture of all ornament and exhibit the naked truth, “ which when unadorned is adorned the most.” An awful responsibility would rest on me were I to hold out inducements to any one, when success depends so much on the taste, physical adaptation, amount of capital, &c. It costs a

considerable sum to bring out and to support the emigrant until he can support himself. Land must be purchased—if from government at 5s. an acre; and if servants be brought out, the expense of maintaining them is considerable; and what can a solitary individual do if he do *not* bring them? Two or three stout hard-working brothers, or a father with a family able and willing to assist, with *some money*, are sure of establishing themselves in rough comfort and plenty in a very few years; but there must be no squeamishness as to fare. In short, it is a plodding, matter-of-fact, and hard-working sort of life, until you become settled; with very little of the romance and adventure about it which is so tempting and alluring to young minds. Yet it has its pleasures too; but people should prepare themselves for what it really is, and therefore I show more of the unfavourable side, and expose the truth in its most undisguised and unflattering state, leaving people to draw their own inferences. There is one point which I recommend to every one coming out; namely, the purchase of cattle from the Cape. Good ponies are very reasonable there also.

M'Dermott's stock has long since arrived. His wooden houses were rather late, but some have been sold for 100%. He lives about three miles from this, and breakfasted with me this morning.

The excellent crops that have been harvested this year (equalling if not exceeding the best in

England,) have inspired us all with confidence; but, from want of labourers and cattle, few have cultivated extensively. Mr. Brockman has had fifteen acres in culture—a great quantity, under existing circumstances—and he as well as others have happily experienced that the sandy soil, at first despised, produces as well as stiff clay soil, and with infinitely less trouble. The present prices of hay are 5*l.* here; 8*l.* at Perth; and 10*l.* per ton at Freemantle.

You will have had, before this reaches you, all the information you sought as to the Avon River. I fear that there is no large navigable river on this coast, as far as it extends. The Swan serves the purpose of a canal, but the frequent flats are obstacles: these, however, may be deepened or avoided at some future day\*.

*Jan. 6th, 1832.*—This has been a busy day with me. I have put up the posts and wall-plates of a house, 23 feet by 10—6 feet in height, and shall fit up an additional apartment for servants. Nor is my domicile without ornament, as I have made a portico of black-boy sticks, in a very neat yet strong manner, arranged like wicker work, and then plaistered over with stiff well-tempered clay.

I have been calculating the expense of my little establishment since I occupied it. It is nearly as follows:

---

\* I have here omitted a great part of the Journal as comparatively uninteresting,—Ed.

14 cwt. of meal	£50	0
1 ton of flour	30	0
Rum	10	0
Wine	6	0
Rice	6	0
Sugar	5	0
Coffee	4	0
Tea	1	10
Oil	3	0
Soap	2	0
Wages and clothes for servants	36	0
Clothes for myself	20	0

After adding wages and the value of garden vegetables, you may see the present expenses of a colonist here.

8<sup>th</sup>.—Dined with Mr. Mackie. His grant, with the new house and garden, are the pride of the colony. The house is prettily situated on a gently-rounded eminence, rising from an extensive meadow flat, on the bank of the river. The house, when completed, is to be flat-roofed with boards, pitched and caulked like the deck of a ship. He has great quantities of melons and cucumbers, which probably produce as much money as pays his steward's salary—52*l.* a-year—besides rations for a family of eleven persons. From the front of my little crib I can see into his hall door.

10<sup>th</sup>.—Opened my chest of books, which has been at Freemantle since my arrival; they are in better condition than I could have expected after so long and close a confinement, and looked very like, and, by association of thoughts, reminded me of old friends. The collection of English grasses

which Furlong gave me is a source of great amusement to me. The botanists here say, that though our grasses resemble many of the British sorts, there is some slight characteristic difference in each ; but such is the similarity, that I am justified in asserting that there are here several species of *Poa*, and we have the *Holcus*, and *Avena*. Thirty species have been enumerated on no very extensive space.

11th.—I have heard that a vessel was about to sail for Van Diemen's land and take a mail, as I sat down beside a party who were talking despondingly about the want of flour, and of cattle, neglect of servants, and many other *désagremens* of this kind.

I have frequently spoken of the climate. I think it the very *beau idéal* of one. We are now in the hottest month of the year, enjoying a delicious breeze, with the thermometer at 77°. It is true that when there is neither breeze nor cloud to darken the sun's noontide rays, the heat is very great ; but this is not often the case. Since March last, the imagination could not conceive more delicious weather, the time of year considered. The *Egyptian* has arrived, and brought tidings of joy to many a family here, and many a beloved member has joined the emigrés who had preceded them ; but where, oh where are *my* friends ? I often ask myself, am I ever to see you again ?—Farewell !

G. F. M.

## PERTH.

COMPLAINTS OF THE COLONISTS—SCARCITY OF PROVISIONS—SWAN RIVER COMPARED WITH VAN DIEMEN'S LAND—THE AUTHOR'S APPOINTMENT—WEATHER—DIFFICULTIES OF THE COLONISTS—RESEMBLANCE BETWEEN COCKATOOS AND CROWS—LASCAR LAW-SUIT—HOME RECOLLECTIONS—A NEW SETTLER—MODE OF EMPLOYING TIME—THE KANGAROO RAT—A MANUSCRIPT NEWSPAPER—PROJECTED BANK—A SETTLER KILLED—KING GEORGE'S SOUND—SPECULATIONS ON THE COUNTRY—EMIGRATION—ATTEMPT ON THE AUTHOR'S LIFE—LAW AFFAIRS.

Jan. 12, 1832.

OUR colonists are complaining that their friends and connexions at home have made so little exertion to assist them through the first difficulties. It might have been obvious that an infant settlement could not altogether support itself independently of extrinsic aid. Vessels have not been encouraged to come here, and those that have arrived have brought scarcely any provisions. We have at present no more than a few weeks' supply of flour, and are totally without rice, maize, peas, barley, or oats: we may have as much wheat as may serve for six weeks, with great economy; but it is already selling at 25s. per bushel. Vessels have been expected daily for the last three months, and we are now sick of hope. We have reason, however, to calculate on the arrival of the *Sulphur*, from Hobart Town,

with provisions, before the end of the month : the *David Owen* and *Swan River* packets are daily expected from Hobart Town. The state of the colony at present is dispiriting ; but we hope it will not long continue so, and that we shall rise above every difficulty and discouragement. A helping hand is now greatly needed ; and a little extra aid from the Government would enable us to procure working cattle, milch cows, and sheep, and would place us beyond the chance of poverty or privation. This is a country where there are few natural productions that are edible, but it produces crops inferior to none in England, and with less trouble : indeed the soil is capable of producing any crop, and its herbage is abundant for the support of cattle. I should not, perhaps, have touched on this point, had it not been the subject of conversation in a company which I have just left ; and indeed this point is the general topic of conversation in the colony at present. I fear my letter is calculated to give you an unfavourable impression of our situation ; yet I am convinced, when the Government at home shall have been fully informed of our circumstances, that we shall receive such assistance as it will be consistent with good policy to grant.

21st.—I have been about fourteen months in the colony, and what a change everywhere here ! How much has been effected by the unassisted, unencouraged industry of a few individual

•

settlers! We are all eating the produce of our own fields, and how sweet our bread! This is made in the simplest way—we grind the wheat in our own hand-mills, troubling neither flour-dressers nor millers, *for a reason we have.*

I had written thus far, and was going to bed, when a voice hailed for a boat from the other side of the river; it was that of Captain Shaw, bringing the news from Perth that vessels had arrived.

22nd.—Sat up a great portion of last night reading all your letters, papers, &c. I regret that I did not keep a list of those which I sent to you, so as to refer to them, *in the diplomatic way*, by numbers, 1, 2, 3, &c.: I could then ascertain whether any had miscarried *in transitu*: I have let no opportunity pass without sending a letter of some sort, no matter how hurried.

A small vessel (the *Eagle*) has arrived from Hobart Town; others are daily expected. By this vessel I have received your letters from the 16th to the 21st July, 1830. They are inexpressibly cheering to my feelings, as they show the deep interest which all my friends take in my welfare. Before this time you must have received many from me, descriptive of myself, my feelings, and real situation, without the slightest attempt at colour, ornament, concealment, or disguise. This I promised, this I have performed hitherto, and every day gives me better hopes and prospects; however, be the case as it may, I shall



continue as I have begun. If any of my letters breathe a spirit of impatience, or betray any lurking anxiety or feverish discontent, pray forgive me, and attribute these expressions to the real cause—the natural anxiety of one separated totally from his relatives, the irritability of suspense, and the honest intention of showing myself to you just as I am. It would be very easy for me to dress up a tempting account; there are materials enough for the ground-work; but as I have no object to obtain, and no purpose to serve, but to inform you truly and minutely how I live and what I see, (so that you may almost live with me, as it were, from day to day,) I prefer giving you this unembellished journal. Many of those things which came from England by the *David Owen* have been left at Hobart Town. Mr. Tanner has been greatly disappointed on this account. By the way—I mentioned in a former letter that his brother-in-law, Mr. Viveash, had proceeded to Van Diemen's Land; letters have been received from him which tend to prove that that boasted place is not a Paradise. Many people hurried away there without giving our colony a fair trial, or perhaps desirous of postponing the day of industrious labour as long as possible. Mr. Viveash is not one of these; he possesses energy and capital; yet, with these advantages, he writes that “if he were not so shackled

by the purchase of the farm which he holds within ninety miles of Hobart Town, he would leave it and come here." He is seven miles from the nearest visiting neighbour, and he cannot send his flocks out without four men to protect them;—neither do they multiply as he expected, owing to mismanagement, casualties, or theft; and the climate he describes as very *variable*. The thermometer is sometimes 125° in the day, and only 45° at night, and the distance inland very inconvenient. It has quite reconciled Mrs. Tanner to this place, where the society is good and the climate delightful.

23rd.—Would you believe that I have a *monkey* in my room constantly, and placed on my table at dinner time!!! This name is given here to a sort of earthen jar for holding water, and which from its porousness keeps the water cool by evaporation. \* \* I was going to bed when a soldier was sent to say that Captain Irwin, Mr. Lewis, Mr. Peel and his son, had arrived at Captain Irwin's on the other side of the river, and to know how many beds I could make up. I was able to accommodate two of the party.

25th.—The Messrs. Burgess were here this evening on their way from Freemantle; *their* friends have sent them pork, beef, flour, rum, cheese, butter, and other things; the pork they are selling at eight or nine guineas a cask; flour

at 10*d.* per lb ; cheese 2*s.* 6*d.* per lb ; if a venture had been sent, as I recommended, it would have arrived probably at this time.

A sensation of despondency sometimes comes over me when I think of these high prices, the expense of clothing, and the high wages for servants, who, however, give me to understand, that if at the expiration of their stipulated period of service, I give them as much as another master would do, they will do me the honour of remaining with me ! However, perhaps, by that time you may be able to supply me with a fresh importation. I should willingly pay the expenses of passage, &c. ; but it will be time enough at the end of this year to arrange this matter.

27*th.*—What have I been doing all day? Sowing seeds of garden vegetables, grinding wheat, and keeping up fires to burn fallen trees.

It may appear a trifling job to burn a tree, but it is not so. I have been ten days trying to burn one, and only a third part is consumed yet.

On Monday evening I left my place with a fishing basket on my back to go to Perth by Guildford, and lost my way, but reached the latter place an hour after sunset. Next day called on the Meareses, and helped to put up their grand piano in its place, and was promised some music for my pains. Stayed to dine. In the evening intelligence came of the Governor's arrival at Freemantle, whither I proceeded next day. Made

some purchases at Freemantle. Paid £7 10s. for a cask of pork to Mr. Burgess \*.

\* \* \* \*

*Feb. 17th.*—I was on this day sworn in a commissioner of the civil court in Western Australia, which will open early next month. This court is almost without limit as to jurisdiction; juries may be called for, if the parties will pay them; an appeal lies to the governor and council in cases beyond a certain amount; short forms to be used, with few technicalities. I have had rare work cutting down long declarations into small compass, making forms of conveyance, leases and mortgages, pruning of all redundancies, and reducing all to an alarmingly small size. You remember I had rather a taste for this, and I have entered on my occupation *con amore*.

\* \* \* \*

*27th.*—Busy, in Perth, making arrangements with respect to the court; and I have bought a town allotment in Perth, with a house partly built on it. The situation (on the river) is beautiful, and about twenty pounds will be sufficient outlay for putting the house into repair: it will be valuable. The allotment is thirty-three yards wide, and ninety-nine yards long. It cost 11l. 5s. 6d. to fence the front, with the regula-

---

\* Another considerable *gap* (which is the English word for *hiatus*, as I understand) occurs here.—Ed.

tion-post and rail fence made of mahogany ; the railing at the sides is of split wood. Bricks are to be had at 2*l.* 4*s.* a thousand, not far from the spot, and the charge for drawing them in bullock-carts is seven shillings an hour.

I left Perth on Saturday, and went to Guildford : the heat most oppressive. Remained at Whitefield's all night, and reached home this morning. For two days past the weather has been very warm, thermometer about 125° — this is the greatest heat we have felt this year ; yet the *mornings* are already cool. I have before told you that our neighbour, Mr. Buchanan, has had the misfortune to have his house burned down by accident ; all his furniture, clothes, plate, linen, &c. are destroyed. The conflagration took place about ten days ago, but he has a small house repaired again for his accommodation.

*March 4th.*—Prices have risen to a very serious height just now, and there is consequently a great outcry in the colony. Some of our friends appear to think that we are so well off that we cannot possibly want for any thing ; and others probably imagine we are so far gone, that it is hopeless to send us any thing ; so we fall *between the two stools*. Can you picture to yourself a new colony ? You cannot. It is impossible for one, in the midst of the luxurious refinements of the old country, to conceive the actual state of a new one. Not that there are intolerable hardships, nor even great privations ; but people's fancy will play them the

trick of supposing that from throwing seed into the ground we can ensure a crop without any other trouble; whereas our culture, and all our operations, are most laborious: my two men have been now nearly a month *looking* for thatch and putting it on two houses, which are not near finished yet. As to breaking ground, it is easy when you have cattle; but, generally speaking, we are not so provided. It occupies a man twenty days to break up an acre with a hoe, from its wild state, though this could be done easily with cattle. But, as I have already observed, we have few of them, and the neighbouring colonies will not send them, either from jealousy or fear; and individually we cannot afford to charter vessels and import them, and we are not yet strong enough to form a company. What can we then do?—two or three hundred head of cattle, and two or three thousand sheep, would be purchased by us, if they were sent by Government at a fair rate; and this would establish the colony.

Last night the weather was so calm and warm that I left the windows open on going to bed; but, after some time there sprang up such a cool and strong breeze that I was obliged to close them; one excellence of our climate is, that there is none of that enervating heat at night which exhausts the constitution in India.

9<sup>th</sup>.—I have had two court days: twenty cases for trial.

13<sup>th</sup>.—I sent a few lines to you by Hobart

**Town**, in a small colonial vessel which left this about a fortnight since, for the purpose of procuring a supply of wheat and flour, of which we have been in great need. An unfounded rumour, originating from interested motives, has affected us seriously. At Hobart Town, a report circulated that we had been abundantly supplied by two vessels from Calcutta; in consequence, no supplies were shipped; and the captain of the *Sulphur*, which was sent there to procure provisions, seems to have acted on the same report. The effect is, that we have been in great want of flour and wheat, and are exceedingly impatient for the arrival of vessels, many an anxious eye straining its gaze over the ocean.

16th.—The *Helen* schooner has arrived from Hobart Town on her way to the Mauritius: she can spare us twenty tons of flour, some wheat, and a few potatoes. You see some of the difficulties we labour under here at present; yet we shall shortly have means established to provide regular supplies; but in the meantime our markets must be liable to great fluctuations. We daily look out for the *Sulphur*, *Cornwallis*, *Nimrod*, and the *Jolly Rambler*; most of these may be here in one or two months, and then we shall have abundance.

I have been so occupied for some time, that I have been unable to keep up my journal even irregularly. I shall try to recal some of the

events that have occurred. My sitting days in the court have been Tuesdays and Fridays in each week—there were many arrangements to be made.—I generally come up here on Saturday, and return on Monday; and I have to walk the distance, which is nearly sixteen miles: the hours of sitting in the court are from ten to five. I have already sat four times: the average number of cases has been about fifteen each day; some of them trifling, and some important and complicated; the pleadings are oral; the case is heard in a week after its commencement; judgment is given immediately; the costs of court in each case are very trifling; and a man may have his case tried, judgment given, and execution and sale within a fortnight. No jury is impannelled in any case under 100*l.*, and then only if the parties choose to pay for it.

I have been this day busy getting trees burned, and ground prepared for a wheat crop. I shall have almost three acres broken up and under crop; but I have not yet procured horses or oxen for my plough. We have been proposing to the Governor to import cattle, and we would guarantee him; he is well inclined to assist us, but the means allowed him are very limited.

21*st.*—I was setting fire to some stumps of trees to-day, when, a spark communicating with the grass, in a few minutes the whole scene appeared one sheet of living fire. It was in the



heat of the day, and my exertions to extinguish it and to prevent its progress to the dry grass near the house were quite exhausting.

The vessel which has come from Van Diemen's Land has not delivered my letters yet: the impression is, that there are some on board which are suppressed until her cargo of flour is disposed of at high prices—to such tricks are we subject; and every effort to keep us back seems to be resorted to by the people of that colony.

You speak of nets and other things arriving by Van Diemen's Land, or Sidney. I have not received them, and probably never shall \* \*

\* \* \* \* \*

*April 4th.*—I got home a thousand bricks to-day, made on Mr. Bull's grant, near this, for there was not time to make them on my own. I pay 30s. per thousand for them. Fished a long time to-day without success; yet I saw fish in plenty, but they would not take the bait; and I have no nets. Went out with my gun to look for cockatoos, being particularly anxious for fresh meat; but the birds were most wary, and I could not get near them. No two birds can be more different in outward appearance than crows and cockatoos, yet in their habits they are similar; they go in flocks, call and give the alarm to one another, and fly off with a noise equal to that of a rookery.

*5th.*—The weather is now very delightful,

thermometer 80°; spring is already commencing—and remember that our winter and spring are nearly the same. I heard the song of a sweet bird to-day: it was new to me. Will the season have its wonted influence on me? It is but within a very few years that I have been engaged in life as a *man*, and already I am set down as an *old* one.

*April 7th.*—Nine cases yesterday: one was for 230*l*.

I was much amused by two Lascars, who came into the court for justice—I have not time to give you a full detail of their case; it ended, by one calling upon the other to take his oath, which he did by taking off his cap and speaking within it: “Me speak truth, my cap—all same me speak truth, my head—all same me speak truth, my body—me speak truth, my cap—me have my head cut off me speak lie, my cap—me go to —” Here he made a low salute, and pointed down—I looked at the other: “Are you satisfied?”—he made a low obeisance, and both walked off together, having settled their lawsuit to their mutual satisfaction. \* \* \* \*

*11th.*—I lose all spirit when writing to you, and feel that my letters are lapsing into cold formality or peevish querulousness; but my situation must excuse me, for where is the overflowing of affection, the outpouring of unrestrained communica-

tion? where the wonted relation of domestic anecdotes, identifying our feelings in mutual sympathy? How my heart yearns after home!

“The sweet hours  
Of social converse and instructive ease.”

I am here an isolated man! without parent, brother, sister, or friends, except those of yesterday—and in them I am most fortunate: how my heart pants at times for some old friend or companion, and some dear familiar face! how devotedly could I attach myself to such an one! But you, in the midst of society, cannot understand this feeling of *nostalgia*, and may smile at it. I used to smile too, most incredulously, when I read of such a thing—of the poor Swiss, for instance, dying from a fatal longing after his beloved mountain home,

“Et moriens dulces reminiscitur Argos.”

Who has not known and tasted the bitterness of this sensation, the throbbing, the aching, the hopeless despondency of the heart? May *you* never experience this feeling! for it is one which requires the indifference of a Stoic, or the patient resignation of a Christian, to endure without repining. I endeavour to obtain the latter quality, but fall lamentably short of it, and therefore apply myself to laborious occupation, as a diversion of the thoughts from painful contemplation. Did I hear

from you regularly—were I thus made sure of your remembrance and your sympathies, my mind would be more at ease, or at least sustained by hope ; but now nearly a year\* has gone by without any intelligence from home. I had hoped it would have been otherwise ; and I had reason to hope ; and I will still cling to hope, “ even against hope.”

Crash ! crash ! a tree fallen!—I have burnt down three to-day, and expect to have two more consumed to-night.

12<sup>th</sup>.—On referring to the date of my last letter, you will find that we were uneasy about the scarcity of provisions ; but I have this day heard of the arrival of the *Meropé* from Van Diemen's Land, with flour and twenty barrels of pork ; and with, what is still more cheering to me, a settler of some importance—Major Nairn. The circumstance of his coming here is powerfully in favour of the superiority of this colony to that in Van Diemen's Land ; for he had been a long time there, had come here, liked the place, and bought a lot of land, and then gone back to Van Diemen's Land for stock—and here he is to live among us.

It is now approaching to our winter ; yet the weather is so mild that I am sitting without a coat, and in my undress ; have been out all day

---

\* Accidents had detained letters from his affectionate family.

burning the stumps of trees, so no wonder for me to doff the outer garment; the thermometer standing at 80°. James and John have learned to use the cross-cut saw, which enabled me to clear away, with the subsequent aid of fire, the gum trees, which are extremely hard and heavy, not unlike sycamore in colour, but much more ponderous.

14th.—My thermometer has fallen this morning to 52°. I have been digging out potatoes—a miserable crop; but no wonder, for the seed was very wretched, and planted in a very dry spot, which will not answer in our dry summer. Thermometer up again to 62°; lovely moonlight night.

Two pigs smothered by their mamma's awkwardness; and Letty came in like the Trojan of old, "so dull, so dead in look, so woe-begone, and would have told me—" all my pork was out.—But it is no joking matter, nor am I in a humour for heroics now, for it is a sad truth that my last bit of pork was boiled this day.

. Oh, for some of that which you have in Dublin for twenty shillings per cwt. ! You, master Joseph, would think salt pork very sorry food, especially without cabbage, or any other vegetable; but we colonists think it sumptuous at this present moment. I am breakfasting on bread and coffee, without butter, milk, or eggs—but next year I hope to fare better: and as to the dinner of to-day, I shot three pigeons before breakfast. Our usual

hour for dinner is *one*, a very *natural* time for eating. An additional blanket at night is *now* acceptable, although by day the thermometer is 72°; and woollen clothes in the morning and the evening are agreeable.

23rd.—Here has been an *hiatus—valde deflendus*—of a week; but I have had nothing to enter in the log, except a walk to Guildford and Perth, where I had some troublesome cases to settle in court. On Wednesday I purchased a cask of pork (price 10*l.*), and three bushels of wheat, and saw Major Nairn, who is in love with the climate, and on Saturday evening walked to Guildford, carrying not only my fishing-basket, but two hundred cabbage-plants, which I got from the Governor's gardener: this morning I had them planted, and have just made up my mind to cover the two or three acres of wheat which I am about to sow by the spade and shovel, as I have no cattle for the plough;—apropos of cattle: for the first time, I have killed a young pig for my own table; and this, let me tell you, is an extravagant dish here.

26th.—Mr. Brockman has made an exchange with me: I gave him three young pigs for eight bushels of wheat, worth fifteen shillings a bushel, which will afford me an ample supply of seed. A sad misfortune has occurred to me: my thermometer has fallen, and is irreparably broken to pieces! It was a great comfort to me; I looked at it

every night since I left Ireland, when I was noting my journal. I cannot get one here at any price, and beg that you will send me one.

28th.—Nothing surprises me more than that we never baked our own bread at home. Nothing is more simple. The produce of an acre of wheat would supply your family for a year. A hand-mill, sieve, and metal oven are the only machinery required. There is no mystery in baking, where fraudulent adulterations are not *particularly desired*.

29th.—Read a sermon of Burder's this day ; and dined on four crows and a quail. The latter flew across the river from a fire which was spreading near it, and took refuge almost at my door, reversing the adage, and coming out of the fire into the frying-pan. It was a pity to shoot it, but —. I drank tea in the evening with Mrs. Tanner, and promised to dine on Monday with Mr. and Mrs. Brown, who have informed me that Captain B., of the *Merope*, who has a farm in Van Diemen's Land, wishes to have a large grant on the Swan River—does not this promise much in favour of our colony ?

30th.—I have contrived to mend the broken stock of a gun, and planted three hundred cabbage plants. Remarked at night that the cat lay with her back to the fire—a sure indication of storm ; shut up my windows close, in the anticipation of it, and went to bed early.

May 1st.—The cat was right—dark morning,

and much rain during the past night. Planted some potatoes in drills, and wished for some good seed of the apple species. Compelled by the rain to give up work, and fortunately shot a crow for dinner; this stewed in soup with a tomato, is an excellent mess. Rain, rain, all day, which put me in mind of Ireland; were it not for its effects on the land, I should never desire to see a drop of it, greatly preferring the driest weather however hot.

Young Burgess called on me in the evening, after a hunting expedition, with an emu on his shoulder—a huge animal. He gave me a foot, which I intend to send to you: the dimensions of this foot are—from the heel to the nail of the middle toe, eight inches; from the knee joint to the toe, twenty-two inches: it is a turkey's foot in shape, greatly magnified: the bird stands, I am told, eight feet high. I intend to try my own luck in emu hunting on Thursday, if the weather prove fine.

2nd.—Another day of frequent but not continued rain, accompanied with strong wind from the N. W. In the evening I sauntered out with my gun towards the hills; saw two kangaroos at a distance, and was brought to a stand by a low sound, which I conjectured to have been the voice of natives, but happily discovered that it proceeded from large frogs, which now issue from their hiding places and utter their “dulcet sounds.”

“Et veterem in limo Ranae cecinere querelam.”



*3rd.*—Went to the hills in rear of my place in search of kangaroos with Mr. Burgess, jun. ; we had six dogs, and traversed a very picturesque glen, through which Colonel Latour's Brook, as it is called, winds its way.

This glen diverges into three distinct branches, apparently of no great extent ; but in this we may be mistaken, for these valleys frequently contract in some places and expand again beyond expectation. The sides of those which we have just seen are very precipitous, and formed of granite, which in huge masses covers the bottom ; pools are here and there, but no continuous streams, I should suppose, in summer. The result of our sport was, one kangaroo weighing thirty pounds, and an eagle. We hung the kangaroo on a tree until our return, and carried it home on our backs in rather a droll way. Fancy the legs round your neck, the thighs resting on your shoulders, the head dangling at your heels, and the tail bobbing over your head. We also caught a young kangaroo rat, which I have still alive ; it is soon a tame thing, very like a kangaroo in miniature ; but with a head larger in proportion, and with hair or fur of coarser texture. We saw several old huts of natives ; eleven in one place, seven in another, with fur and feathers strewed upon the ground.

*4th.*—The storm has entirely abated, and the day is mild. One of the peculiarities of this

climate is said to be, that rainy weather never continues longer than three days in succession; it was so within my own experience last year.

In the evening sowed a little wheat in the garden where potatoes had been, and as a reward for my labour dined on steaks of kangaroo, and excellent soup made of the fore-quarter and tail, and afterwards enjoyed vocal music—I mean a frog concert.

5th.—Mr. Burgess tells me that he has purchased two bullocks at 25*l.* each, and advises me to buy one; but as I have only two acres more to plough, it is better to wait until the next season. Mr. Tanner has purchased eighty-two sheep at 33*s.* each; they are considered worth the money, though in very poor condition after their voyage from Van Diemen's Land. I myself offered in vain 50*l.* the other day for seventeen merinos.

10th.—Nothing very particular or new has occurred within these few days past, excepting a third attempt at a newspaper here in *manuscript*. It is a rare specimen, and somewhat costly, price 3*s.* 6*d.* I ought to have before recorded the shooting of bitterns, pigeons, and parrots, in a hunting excursion with Mackie and Stone, on the margin of a lake which is ten miles in circumference, where we saw swans and ducks in abundance, but could not get near them. However, we had a dinner for six shillings each, of wild ducks, besides pudding and cheese, with

three bottles of wine, at a *house of entertainment* near the lakes. This sounds grandly. But as a set-off, there are but fifteen casks of pork in the whole colony, and they ask 14*l.* for one of them. You should send pork from Ireland ; it can never come at an unseasonable time.

We have had great discussions about the establishment of a bank ; a prospectus has been submitted to the Governor, soliciting an advance of 5000*l.* on security of twenty-five solvent and responsible individuals ; but his Excellency has not the power of meeting our wants and wishes, and suggests the expediency of raising the required capital by subscription among the colonists. There is a good opening here for the application of capital by moneyed men, who would receive very high discount. If the Governor could advance money to settlers on discount of bills at 5 per cent., the colony *would be served in an inconceivable degree*, settlers being now obliged to borrow, sometimes at 25 per cent. interest !

12*th.*—Great excitement has prevailed among us this morning, a loud report having been heard at a very early hour, supposed to come from a ship hourly expected with supplies.—Pshaw ! it was only the accidental blowing up of a flask of gunpowder.

Some of the offices which government had built at Perth are to be sold to settlers, and more commodious ones built at Perth, with a

church, forming nearly one side of a handsome square. We are getting on.

15th.—The men have finished the wheat sowing, dibbling it in with forks, and I have shot a whole brood of teal on the river. The *Cornwallis* has arrived with wheat, flour, potatoes, and eighty-five sheep; the latter engaged by Mr. M'Dermot at 25s. a head. I have offered to give two bullocks.

18th.—This has been a day of unintermitting rain, and the swelling of the river indicates a storm from the N.W. Probably the wind impels the sea into the river before we perceive its force; and thus the rising of the water, which appears to us as the prognostic of the N.W. wind, is in reality but the effect. Being prevented by the badness of the weather from going out, I have been engaged in building occupations within, and amused at the gambol motions of a little kangaroo, which I took the other day out of its mother's pouch as she was running from a hunting party. The poor little thing attaches itself to my foot, and hops along with me wherever I go; "*passibus æquis*;" its bed is in my old cloth slipper. Apropos, an arrival of shoes from Van Diemen's Land.

21st.—A passing traveller called out this morning that there was a turkey in the plain above. Such a hint was not to be despised; three of us accordingly sallied out, just in time to see the bird flying away. We followed, and

saw some natives, who disappeared on our approach. We deemed it prudent not to be too curious, being in such matters pretty much of Falstaff's mind, that "the better part of valour is discretion." After this unsuccessful sally, I worked in the garden very busily, sowing turnips in drills, and planted fifty-six pounds of potatoes. At times I feel very happy here; and if it were not from the want of my own family and old companions, I should be always so, as my occupations are of a healthy, happy, and innocent nature.

23rd.—What have been the events of this day? Robert was making a window frame,

"Nunc has, nunc illas mutat, reficitque fenestras."

Johnny whitewashing, and James burning weeds. I got an acre of wheat harrowed in by a friend's bullocks, not like the "*Beatus ille*" of Horace, who,

"Paterna rura bobus exercet suis;"

and then went kangaroo hunting, without success, and drank tea with Mr. Burgess, who gave me a young snake, which is now in the bottle of preserves.

24th.—Gardening. Bathed twice in the river to cool myself in the midst of the *terrible* winter. Robert declares his inability to finish the window sashes. I have now two acres of wheat,—of oats, and nearly an acre in garden under turnips,

cabbages, rape, potatoes, carrots, borecole, radishes, spinach, peas, lettuces, mustard, onions, tomatos, and almonds, and hope to have another acre of wheat and one of barley, besides some portion under maize and millet, at an expense of 3*l.* per acre for breaking up the land with hired teams, but more probably I shall substitute my own young cattle. Mr. T. was with me this day; he seems to think that we should send home a strong memorial with respect to our state, and that the charge of 5*s.* an acre on this colony, while in its infant state, is too heavy a drag on its exertions. This settlement is, however, rapidly rising in strength and comfort. Hotels and lodgings are to be had—shelter and food for the stranger. This was not the case at first with our settlers, who suffered severe privations, and who in many cases expended their strength and substance in preparation for others, who are now reaping the benefit of the first sacrifices.

Some of our colonists, who have returned from Launceston, report that town to be inferior to Freemantle, which has undoubtedly improved considerably, comfortable stone houses rising in all directions. Water has been found in abundance, and the sand is discovered to possess most fertilising properties. It seems to rest upon a stratum of limestone at no great depth, and this substance, though until lately despised, is now highly valued. An hotel has been built, and the

accommodations which it affords, as to bed and board, are good, and moderate in charge.

If there were adequate capital to stock and till the soil around it, the capabilities of improvement are considerable ; and if we had the means of developing our own resources, we should undoubtedly be a flourishing colony in a few years. Even as it is, we have advanced exceedingly. Did ever colony make such a struggle as ours has done, without extraneous assistance? Sidney and Van Diemen's Land were aided by forced labour, and stimulated by Government expenditure ; but we have had no such support ; we have relied solely on our own efforts ; and yet, under the most discouraging circumstances, are prospering.

*" Sperat infestis, metuit secundis  
Alteram sortem bene præparatum  
Pectus."*

26th.—The ground crisped with frost in the morning ; but the temperature of the air in the succeeding part of the day delightful, like a day in September or October with you, when the sun shines clearly. It is, indeed, a lovely climate ; and if we can struggle on through our first difficulties (and friends and foes sometimes bear hard against us), we shall be happy.

By the delay of the Sulphur during four months, our pockets have been prettily picked in purchasing wheat at 35s. (nay, even 40s.) a bushel, when we ought to have had it for 10s. ; and every other

article dear in proportion. She was ordered to be here on the 1st of February, but has not arrived yet. Fresh meat brings 1s. 10d. per pound; and yet in Ireland you often want a market for your pork. If you had taken my advice about shipping off a lot of it——

Irish produce—pork, butter, cheese, and oatmeal—is always sure of a market here.

I have to tell you that my house in Perth is finished: it cost me, including the grant, above 100l.; and would bring 20l. a year.

28th.—While sitting after tea with Mr. Tanner, last night, we heard firing from guns loaded with ball—for we have learned to distinguish very accurately.—An officer was with us; and as we set out to learn the cause, a soldier came up to inform him that the barrack was attacked by fifty natives: we hurried onwards and heard much noise, but saw no natives. They had retreated; and it is doubtful whether their advance had been with any hostile intention.

June 5th.—Worked in the garden transplanting turnips and sowing seeds. I have lost two young pigs, and have now only seventeen—one bull, three oxen, one heifer (soon to calve), and a goat. What would Robinson Crusoe have been without the latter?

I cut down several trees, and split rails for fencing-in a cattle-pen, twenty-eight feet square; with a thatched house, twenty-eight feet by ten



feet, forming one side of it. This house, experience has taught me, is essentially necessary, as I lost my cow last winter by not having shelter for her when she calved. There is great pleasure in viewing the gradual improvement of a wilderness:

“ Now, 'midst the desert, fruitful fields arise,  
That, crown'd with tufted trees and springing corn,  
Like verdant isles the sable waste adorn ;  
The forest wonders at the unusual grain,  
And secret transports touch the conscious swain.”

But we labour rather for posterity : however, so it is with every one who is the artificer of his own fortune. I can look forward to having, at no very distant period, orange groves and vineyards—and really this grant of mine is a pretty spot ; and I am quite foud of it.

Have I ever before enumerated my building and garden appendages?—They consist of a dwelling-house, kitchen, and servants'-room ; cattle-pens, sheds, pig-yards, and fowl-house ; garden and field, fenced.

The river runs within seventy or eighty yards of the house, and is yet salt ; but the frost will freshen it. We shall have in this settlement this year 435 acres under *grain* (last year 160), producing on an average fifteen bushels per acre ; and probably shall be soon independent of imported corn. Some lands yield abundantly ; a small patch on Captain Irwin's flat produced last year (sown in October and reaped in De-

ember) at the rate of 48s. a bushel per acre, an amazing produce, without manure or fallowing; it was merely dug up and sown immediately after. Few lands, however, are so good: perhaps twenty bushels would be a safe average to calculate on.

15<sup>th</sup>.—The Sulphur has arrived; the cause of the delay was the impossibility of procuring wheat—a right good reason. On Friday last, my court was crowded with persons eager to hear the first cause tried before a jury in this colony: it was an action of defamation, brought by one merchant against another, and the damages were laid at 1000*l*. Ready-written speeches were delivered, and many points were raised. The foreman was Mr. Andrews, a most respectable and wealthy merchant, and altogether the jury was of a superior grade. The trial occupied two days, and, after some deliberation, ended in a verdict for 39*l*. damages.

That and the succeeding day (9<sup>th</sup>) were very wet; thunder and lightning and some heavy hailstones accompanied the rain: on Sunday, however, it cleared up again. In the evening I enjoyed a delightful walk to Guilford; and before I left it on Monday, was the proud possessor of thirty-four Merino sheep and ten lambs, originally from the stock of Mr. Trimmer, near London, price 65*l*.; and I also bought a heifer for 25*l*., and bullock-yokes, chains, &c. &c. for 3*l*., from a gentleman who is about returning in the Sulphur. My

carpenter has been most busily idle in making a small pen for cattle—this, with two tables and three stools, are all that I have from him after a month's work! A good, handy, rough kind of carpenter, able and willing to work, is much wanted here.

I have now brought up my arrears to the present date (15th), and have to add that I was called this day to attend an inquest on the body of a man who was shot last night. It appeared that the natives had yesterday driven away some cattle, and had been tracked up the river by a party of ten colonists, who overtook them at night when asleep. Although our people shouted out when they approached, none of the natives stirred, either from sleep or terror; at length, one of their dogs ran out of a hut, when guns were levelled at him, three of which only went off—the contents of one unfortunately struck a man of our own party in the head, and killed him.

Principles of humanity prevented the slaughter of all the natives there; of whom one, however, was shot in the confusion. The spears, knives, and other weapons, with bags and cloaks, were taken as legitimate booty. Some of their spears and knives are barbed or serrated with bits of glass, which must wound severely. Robertson tells us, in his *History of America*, that the natives of that country used "lances, whose heads were armed with flint."

16th.—All my pigs are missing. I greatly fear that the natives, who killed sixteen of them in my neighbourhood, have taken away or killed mine also. To add to my probable loss, one of my lambs has been so much torn by a native dog, that I have been obliged to kill it.

18th.—Yesterday, the Governor did me the honour of calling at my place: he informed me that a settler was killed by the natives on the Canning River, on the same day that the row occurred here.

23rd.—I closed my last letter only yesterday morning in Perth, to go by the Cornwallis, and have little to note in my diary of this or the three or four preceding days, unless the killing of a lamb (the first of my flock) for my dinner, be deemed worthy of a place in it.

26th.—This day I have been at Guildford, attending a meeting of settlers to take into consideration what is to be done about the natives, whose depredations are truly alarming and disheartening. The meeting was well attended, and strong resolutions were entered into expressive of the opinion that settlers must abandon the colony, if they be not protected in their property. I had the consolation of ascertaining, what before was only problematical, that my missing pigs were wounded in the bush by the natives. This, of course, made me sympathise with my fellow-sufferers, and assist in putting certain resolutions

into shape, previously to their being presented to the Governor.

27th.—On coming home, I find that six of my best pigs are still missing, and that of those which have returned to me, two are wounded; whether severely or not, Johnny, who handed me the bulletin, does not mention. Hermitage, so lately in the most perfect tranquillity, is now in high excitement.

“ Ardet inexcita *Ausonia* atque immobilis ante.”

My warlike propensities are so much excited that I have arranged my affairs, as the phrase goes (thinking of you to the last), and am preparing to watch and attack the natives, and kill, burn, blow up, or otherwise destroy the enemy, as may be most practicable.

28th.—Mr. Irwin and Mr. Shaw, and two soldiers, accompanied me this night in a search after the natives. After a search of two hours, we found, *horresco referens*, the BLOODY HEAD—of one of the pigs—which I had intended to kill in a decent and peaceable manner myself, for my own eating, if these wicked natives had not saved me the trouble. The wretches have destroyed 3*l.* worth of my swine's-flesh altogether; but after all, perhaps, these uninformed creatures think that they have as good a right to our swine as we have to their kangaroos; and the reasoning, if such there be, may be plausible enough: however, if

we had caught them, *flagrante delicto*—in the act of slaughtering them—I would not answer for the force of it.

We have very few soldiers to protect us ; and if our men be employed in watching natives, what is to become of the colony ? Our labours must then be intermitted :

“ Squalent abductis arva colonis,  
Et curvæ rigidum falces conflantur in ensem.”

We are informed that the military are not to be called out except in the case of a systematic attack. But suppose this to be made at the head of the Swan, and one of the soldiers to be sent to Perth for orders, it is scarcely possible that the soldiers could come out to the point of attack within twelve hours—and what is to become, in the meantime, of the family attacked ? When I speak of the necessity of soldiers to protect us, I do not mean that we ourselves are in much personal danger ; but our *cattle* are killed and taken away, if our servants are not continually watching them. I have been congratulated on escaping from a spear thrown by the natives through the window\*. This was a second attack : the first occurred twelve months ago, and I believe that I mentioned it to you. This affair, you will say, has something of personal danger in it.

---

\* The editor has seen this spear—a very rude implement, now in possession of Mr. Joseph Moore.

*July 1st.*—This has been an unpleasant day, (wet,) and I have felt lonely. There was a severe frost yesterday morning, such as I did not expect to experience—the ice being half an inch thick in a wooden dish which was outside the house. I fear that it has injured my potatoes.

*2nd.*—A very lovely day. Walked to Perth, where we had a meeting of the settlers, and great speechifying and discussion; the result of which was, a resolution to request that the Governor would proceed to England as our representative, to state and explain to the home Government many points, which could best be represented in a *vivid voce* communication. His Excellency obligingly met the general wishes of the assembled settlers.

*4th.*—Sessions have been held, and three persons sentenced to transportation.

*5th.*—I have this day read part of Mr. Dale's \* journal of an excursion in the neighbourhood of King George's Sound, and will copy and send it to you if I have time; but it fills upwards of two hundred pages of a journal book. My opinion on reading it is, that the tract of country from this to King George's Sound may be advantageously located when the time shall arrive (and arrive it will) that this colony becomes the fashion; that is, when people shall have ceased

---

\* Subsequently published.—Ep.

to abuse us, and when Government shall have rendered us more effective aid. If my land had not been taken in this quarter, I should have chosen it there ; but here I have as much as I can manage, perhaps more, as the location duties are heavy, and require great exertions to discharge.

7th.—The Governor's pigs have been speared too ; there have been nearly as many killed as would have supported the whole colony during the winter ; and now we have no meat.

8th.—Divine service at Mr. Irwin's, where, as is usual with me, I spent the evening.

9th.—The ground white from frost ; not so last year. I find that we must not plant potatoes so early in future. I have been trussing hay for the market at Freemantle, where the consumer, or rather the owner of the consumer, pays smartly for it ! The hay itself brings 6*l.* at my own door, and the freight costs 8*l.* per ton—14*l.* per ton ! Salt meat is not to be had ; fresh meat costs 1*s.* 8*d.*, and fresh butter 7*s.* per pound. These prices will soon drain the resources of some of the settlers. Earthed up my potatoes, in hopes of saving them from the frost, and then by way of pastime shot a brace of ducks. Laid out a bank and ditch for an enclosure, marked out some ground for ploughing, and sawed down a few trees. This has been a lovely cool day, and the winter is gliding away insensibly. You would consider it a delightful *summer*.



16th.—This is like a March day in Ireland, and I experience the novel sensation of cold feet.

The goat has had two kids ; a pig is nearly fit to kill ; a cask of pork has arrived at my house, and I have wheat and vegetables coming in, and the goat gives me a little milk, and the hens are beginning to lay, so that I am again out of all danger of starvation. My plough is at work for the first time, and answers remarkably well. I paid two pounds for two pair of shoes this day ; one pair for James, the other for myself. My *Bluchers* were completely worn out, and I have not had a dry foot for some time. I paid 17l. 12s. 6d. for forty-seven gallons of rum, and 18l. for a cask of wine.

A native has wounded a soldier on the Murray River with a spear, in a very treacherous way ; but the man is recovering. It is said that the natives have had a severe retaliation, five being killed and many wounded.

18th.—The air is already fragrant with many flowers and shrubs coming into bloom ; what will it not be when we have (as unquestionably we shall have) groves of oranges, limes, almonds, peaches, apples, &c ! We only want the plants ; but sailors are careless of them on the passage hither, and a very small quantity of salt water kills them.

27th.—This has been a day of very active occu-

pation with me. I first brought home my two cows from Mr. Tanner's, and my thirty-three sheep from another neighbour; then ploughed, sowed, and harrowed-in two acres of wheat, and sold a sow for five pounds, to be paid in hurdles, shoes, and ploughing—no money, according to our system of barter. This sow had been among the wounded pigs, but perfectly recovered. Escorted my little flock of sheep to the flat, keeping a sharp look-out for natives, with a good supply of balls in my pocket, but saw none of them: nor was I fasting altogether on this day, having had two eggs and some goat's butter at breakfast. But my cow, like Mrs. Shandy's, "puts off calving terribly." I shall soon have cauliflowers and turnips for dinner; in short, we shall all soon have an abundance of every thing; and as to wheat, it will be so plentiful, that we must see about mills of some kind or other. Steam machinery would be too expensive, and water-power in most places cannot be commanded, as there are few continuous streams; but *wind* mills will yet be in general use. There has been but one experiment of the latter kind, and it has not succeeded well.

30th.—Some of the settlers have met to take into consideration Mr. Lyon's plan for civilising the natives. I wish they were convinced of the evil of their pig-killing ways; "but," as M'Leod says in "Ennui," "I doubt if it will be very

easy." On returning from the house at which the "grand palaver" was held, I found great difficulty in crossing the river, which was much swollen by the rains, particularly as the night was very dark.

31st.—Admired my little flock of sheep greatly, and thought the tinkling of their bells most musical. Have I ever before mentioned that our cows and sheep are furnished with bells, not for the mere sake of the tinkling sound, delightful as it is in the stillness of evening, but as indispensable for guiding us through the woods to the places where the cattle are grazing? Without them we should be sadly perplexed, from the difficulty of providing herdsmen to watch their ramblings. Send me some bells, English spades, and sprongs, by the first opportunity. I want a flute sadly, mine was broken on the passage; and this day, when I took up one which an itinerant schoolmaster left in my kitchen, I found that my fingers had lost their wonted familiarity with it. Cut a drain to convey water from a low piece of ground, and planted some turnips on a piece of land covered with wood ashes from some trees which had been recently burned. Got a chest of tea, which came by the Sulphur, and cost about 2s. a pound; but it is execrable stuff, smelling like musty hay, and of course unfit for use.

August 1st.—Cut cauliflowers for dinner, and killed a pig weighing 112 lbs. Cut him up,

salted, and packed him in a cask: this is one which I saved from the natives.

There is no domestic animal more useful here than the goat; if I were again coming out I should bring a score of goats from the Cape; they are cheap, have frequently two at a birth, are more easily fed and managed than cows, and are not so liable to accidents. My goat has had four kids in one year.

2nd.—A vernal feel in the air. There is something inexpressibly pleasing in the renovation of nature; every budding flower which this genial climate brings early to our view, I look upon as a messenger to notify the approach of more joyous days. Every thing perceptibly vegetates already, and the pleasure of witnessing the growth of plants on my *own* land awakens within me a spirit of energetic interest which otherwise would fail. Not to be idle or too much in the ruminating mood, I dropped turnip or rape seed wherever the ashes of a burnt tree were scattered; and I have no doubt that a careful shepherd, having his employer's interest at heart, might, in this way, while tending his sheep, be most profitably employed. Mine (*when I get him*) shall have an axe to cut down brushwood and small trees, which he can afterwards amuse himself by burning. Thus will he clear patches for me, and bring them into fertility and productiveness for the flock under his care. A little here and there

of artificial green food in the midst of a wilderness of coarse grass, will be a rich and beneficial treat to the sheep.


I hear that the Sulphur is ordered home ; if so, and I can see one of her officers to take it, I shall send you a box of curiosities, consisting of specimens of shrubs, flowers, and grasses in a kind of *hortus siccus* ; spears, cockatoos, and feathers ; a variety of skins, snakes, centipedes, &c. ; but the box is not made yet. I shall, however, make one in a very rough way, and you can get it cleaned and planed afterwards. All the odds and ends which I have in my room at this moment form a very whimsical and incongruous assemblage. Among many others there are four bags of flour, two ditto of wheat, one ditto of oats, a chest of tea, a box of sugar ; spears, guns, pistols ; the feet and feathers of kangaroos and emus ; clothes, books, and *old* shoes. I am now quite reconciled to the irregularities of a settler's life, and can sit as contentedly among these things as if they were the handsomest paintings, or the most elegant articles of furniture arranged in the most fashionable order.

3rd.—The crows have been attacking my newly-sown wheat. Their character for depredations of this kind is just as bad as in England or Ireland. I must shoot some of the rogues, *pour encourager les autres*.

I had an agreeable surprise to-day ; Letty pro-

duced two prints of butter made from the goat's milk ; and, notwithstanding this deterioration of the milk, or abstraction of their allowance, the two kids are thriving. I shall write for two more of them to the Cape ; there they will cost about ten shillings each, and here they are worth from 3*l.* to 5*l.* each. I shall have a mare also from the same place, which will cost only 6*l.* or 7*l.*, though her value here will be from 50*l.* to 70*l.*

6*th.*—I was induced to leave my plough this day for the sake of training my young dog at the kangaroo chace, and caught one after a long run. Have I ever detailed this chace to you ? I believe not. You advance silently, watching in every direction, and when you see a kangaroo, you immediately run in the direction of him, hallooing on the dogs, which follow the game by view as far as the ground is clear. The sportsmen then wait patiently, half an hour or an hour, until the return of the dogs, which is sooner or later according to the length of the chace. The dogs are examined in the mouth to see if they have fur or blood, or the *smack* of kangaroo, which is something like that of bay leaf : if the indications of murder be upon them, they are desired to “ *show* ” the game, and in “ *showing* ” it the excellence of the dog is exhibited. One of ours being desired to “ *show*,” set off at a trot. We all followed at the same pace in a straight line for a mile, at the termination of which he brought us to the dead



kangaroo. But I expect some lucky day to be at a nobler hunt than this—a bull chase—as a wild bull was caught and killed the other day. The meat, (sold at 1s. 6d. per lb.,) produced nearly 50*l.*; and a great sensation has been created by a rumour that thirty-six head of wild cattle has been seen. I doubt the truth of the report. Really this kangaroo-hunting is very important to the settlers in their present circumstances. Some of my friends have had fresh meat of this animal for three months together, when it would have required three casks of pork, at 10*l.* each, to have supplied their establishment during the same period. Thus have their dogs saved them 30*l.*

9*th.*—I have been preparing a statement of expenditure upon my grant, for the purpose of getting the fee-simple of it confirmed to me: the amount required is 675*l.* The account has been submitted to two magistrates for approval, and has been drawn up according to a prescribed form. My expenditure amounts to 1,306*l.* 13*s.*; the items are, buildings, 300*l.*; tillage, 96*l.*; enclosures, 59*l.* 3*s.*; drains, 10*l.*; garden, 20*l.*; clearing, 206*l.*; and under the head of “miscellaneous,” live stock, 245*l.* 10*s.*; crops, 210*l.*; machines, tools, implements, and iron work, 100*l.*; tent used at first settling, 10*l.*; wells, 10*l.*; improvement of pasture by *manure*, 30*l.*; wharf, 10*l.*; total, 1,306*l.* 13*s.* I cleared to-day, with a good American axe, eleven hundred yards of a vista

through the bush on my lower boundary line, and had entertained great hopes that a valley through which the Susannah River (Latour's Brook) issues from the hills, was on my share ; but on getting a view through the vista, I fear that it is not. However, the brook traverses my grant twice, and makes the back ground valuable.

A soldier coming up yesterday from Perth was attacked by natives ; he says that he shot two of them. It will be prudent on my part, when I set out to-morrow morning at day-break, to arm myself with a double-barrelled gun and ball cartridges.

*August 21st.*—Here is a sad hiatus ! partly from absence, partly from occupation. All the foregoing had been written in hopes of my sending it by the Sulphur, but I have been disappointed ; it must remain for a future opportunity. I resume my journal.

*10th.*—I reached Perth without an adventure, and found that the Governor had gone on board the Sulphur, which was standing out to sea ; so that I had no chance of delivering my box on board.

*14th.*—I have had a tremendous-looking list of law cases to dispose of: one was for upwards of 2000*l.*—the parties, a Van Diemen's Land merchant and his agent. The town (Perth) is improving greatly. Buildings are in progress, and palings being put up in front of the allotments.



200*l.* has been offered for my house, which I have refused ; but have let it, in preference, at the rate of 15*l.* a year. I shall leave home for two or three days, as I am pressed by Captain Irwin to witness the ceremony of swearing him in, as Lieutenant Governor, and also to attend a meeting about the establishment of a bank on Saturday.

22*nd.*—Here I am again quietly at home, after my rambles, admiring a fine ewe lamb (a cross between the Merino and Leicester), and cutting away shrubs (but leaving the trees) to clear a space of ground between me and Mr. Tanner. This will allow free circulation of air, prevent the natives from lurking about me, and improve the growth and quality of the grass. Nor were other matters neglected: I transplanted cauliflowers, Swedish turnips, strawberries, almonds, and put down some peach-stones ; after which I dined on an opossum (very like a rabbit, though not so tender) which I shot in a gum tree during my morning's work in the wood ; and washed it down with some excellent home-brewed beer.

24*th.*—Finished opening an uninterrupted line, about a mile in length, across my winter grant ; planted thyme, sowed coriander and red pepper seed, and planted almond trees six feet high, (which I obtained from a gardener in Perth, at one shilling a piece,) twelve sets of sugar-cane, strawberry plants, some Cape gooseberry and rose-tree cuttings, and a few slips of the Cape or Hot-

tentot fig. After all these useful operations, Letty brought me some butter, the first produce of my young cow's milk.

25th.—You will suppose that we are not addicted to the indiscretion of very early marriages, when I state that this day I met a grand *cortège* escorting a sexagenerian man and woman on the high road to matrimony. The bridegroom elect was mounted on his master's horse, and the bride rode behind him.

“ Their nuptial bed may smiling concord dress,  
And Venus still the sober union bless ;  
Mingled with age may mutual love and truth  
To their dim eyes recal the bloom of youth ! ”

I have been clearing brushwood away at such a rate that the very natives will not know the place when they see it again. May it be long until they do see it !—The old plague of servants again.

One of Mr. Tanner's has been sent to gaol for refusing to work ; many are out of employment, yet demand as high wages as ever: fifteen shillings a hundred for slitting paling, and thirty shillings a month, besides diet, for a *boy-man*, or hobble-dehoy. Some of the improvident mechanics at Perth give at the rate of 4s. 6d. and 5s. a dozen for eggs sent there by the settlers at the head of the river.

27th.—The weather now is of a delightful temperature ; I bathed at sunset last night, after having previously warmed myself well by cutting

down trees—you know that bathing when warm is an old and favourite practice of mine. We may now say that winter is over.

“*Frigora mitescunt Zephyris.*”

29th.—Our discussions about the proposed bank have been renewed. Numerous borrowers, but no lenders! I have decided against becoming a shareholder; and am convinced of the advantage which every one here would derive by leaving 50*l.* or 100*l.* every year at home, to be expended in such investments as he might direct. These would bring a return of at least 100 per cent.

31st.—James came to me this morning to know what is to be done for his eye, which was a little sore the other day—the blockhead got at my medicine chest, when I was at Perth, and applied a blister to it!

Sept. 1st.—A wet and stormy day, such as it was on the 30th ult., and very like the weather which we experienced a week after this time last year, when we commenced our expedition over the hills. The river is now higher than I have ever before seen it; but far from the elevation which those who were here in 1829 speak of; yet every thing is growing rapidly, and this morning I heard the notes of at least six different species of birds. It has been assumed and believed that there are no singing birds in Australia: those which I have

heard do not fully deserve to be so classed ; but some of their notes are very sweet, so much so that *I* give them credit for being songsters.

4th.—Busied all this day and yesterday in the garden (which has been rather neglected for some time) planting Caffre corn in rows a yard apart, maize and peas, breaking up some fresh ground, and preparing beds for melons, vegetable-marrow, pumpkins, and cucumbers. Our seasons differ greatly from those of Sydney ; there is there a little rain more or less in every month. Showers commence here in April, and become more frequent and heavy until July ; and decrease until October. We are always sure of dry weather for our hay and grain harvest in the latter end of that month, and the two succeeding ones. The spring this year is much more backward than last year, on account of the frosts. Last season, before this time, I had dug and sold potatoes ; but now (though they were planted as early) I have not any ripe.

Sydney, in the sixth year of its establishment, cost the Government 161,000*l.* for that year. For this colony, 18,000*l.* per annum is the allowance ; but we *hope* for more encouragement.

8th.—Crossing the river after breakfast, on my way to Mr. Ball's, I had to walk across a tree, up to my middle in the water—this was more wetting than I had calculated on. On reaching the other side, I had to take off my trowsers and wring the

wet out of them, and then sit in the sun, in Highland costume, until they were dry: afterwards I dined at Mr. Tanner's. To-morrow I shall visit Guilford, to attend an agricultural meeting; and it is probable that I shall not be at home again for some days, as Tuesday next will be my court-day.

I have just heard that H. M. S. Challenger, Captain Freemantle, has arrived from India, on her way from thence to Hobart's Town, Sydney, New Zealand, Otaheite, Pitcairn Islands, and South America; and that she has landed a seasonable supply of provisions.

Since Colonel Hanson left this, he has published in India a pamphlet, which I hope soon to see.

9th.—This letter, or diary, or whatever else you may please to call it, I shall dispatch by the Challenger to Hobart's Town, whence it will be forwarded, though it is difficult to say precisely when it may reach you; but in the hope that no accident will attend its transmission, I continue my journal.

Our Lieutenant Governor (Captain Irwin), Mr. and Mrs. Browne, and Captain Freemantle, made an excursion recently to the head of the river, in order to give the latter gentleman an opportunity of seeing the country: he was greatly delighted with it, and the weather was very favourable. Captain Freemantle went on the same day

to his ship, and sailed the next morning, taking with him a *select* party of three convicts, whom we have transported from this, and sent to Van Diemen's Land.

14<sup>th</sup>.—The weather for some days has been extremely fine, so that we feared the rain was all over; but this day, towards evening, the wind became very strong, which brought on heavy rain. I have planted, since it dried up, melon, cucumber, and pumpkin seeds: the melon seed is from one which weighed fifteen pounds; and the parent cucumber weighed four pounds. Our turnips are running to seed this year; and this is a general complaint here: we must renew our seed from home. Send me some seeds of early York and sugar-loaf, flat Dutch or drum-head cabbages, Swedish and white Norfolk turnip, cauliflower, and mangel-wurzel.

I do not know to which part of your letters to address myself first. Surely I must have already answered or anticipated all your queries. You ask "of what is the thatch of our houses composed:" every one uses whatever suitable material is most easily procured in his neighbourhood. I used long sedge and bulrushes, some straw, and the tops of the grass-tree; battens or wattles, like laths, are nailed at regular distances across the rafters; the thatch is laid on these, and tied or sewed down with a long needle and rope yarn. The bark of trees has been tried for thatch, and it

answers pretty well, if carefully applied. Mr. Brown has an outside covering of it, about fourteen inches in thickness, over a shingled roof, to keep out heat; but it is expensive. You inquire, "of what quality is *my* land on the Swan?" This is a very general and comprehensive question.—I forget how many thousand varieties of earth old Evelyn reckons: I will not say there are so many varieties on my land, yet it varies considerably. I can give you a section of it.\* On the alluvial land, the grass-wattle and the gum-trees flourish; on another portion, the herbage is of inferior quality, and the trees are consequently of a dwarfish and shrubby nature: one of these looks and smells like white-thorn, and has a white flower, but not of the same shape—I believe it to be of the *Mespilus* species. It is called here, generally, by the English appellative, the May-thorn. The third division has a shrubby covering, and produces the red-gum, white-gum, broom, wattle, and grass trees.

I have acquired some knowledge of the indications of soil: mahogany is indicative of sandy land; red gum, of stiff cold clay; wattle, of moisture; and the broom and dwarf grass tree, of what we term *shrubby herbage*.

The next question you ask is about "water."—

---

\* Mr. Moore frequently amused himself by sketching diagrams, plans, &c. These are here omitted.—Ed.

I have only found one spring good for any purpose, except washing—this water is found two feet under the surface, on a level with the river: plenty of water could be had by digging for it, but none of my people understand this, and I was anxious to avoid the expense of sinking a well. The river water is brackish here only about two months in the year, in April and May, as you may see by my journals. I have thought it worth while to get some water from a fine gushing spring on the other side, for washing.

Your next observations apply to my grant on the Avon, and recommend King George's Sound, or Geograph Bay, where you observe there are said to be "valleys of the richest soil imaginable."—I will not quarrel with this description, not having seen the place; but from what I *have* seen, and from all I can collect from those who have been there, and read from those who have described it, I fear there cannot be any great extent of good land on the coast.—A rich spot or two there may be; but as far as observation has gone, the general opinion seems to be that there is no extensive tract of good land till you have receded some distance from the coast. Mr. Peel's lot on the Murray is, I believe, an exception to this rule, as it is reported to continue good to the sea-side. Probably you will see published by Governor Stirling the journal of an expedition undertaken by Captain Bannister from this to



King George's Sound, when he and his party lost their reckoning and their way, and did not arrive there till after seven weeks and three days. The place at which they *bivouacked* (about the 25th December, 1831) is deemed the best description of country which has been yet discovered. Galway, a man who is splitting timber here now, was of the party: he says, "all the country looked like a great field of oats before harvest;" —(kangaroo grass has very much that appearance). This was upon a *river of pools*, nearly in the line of a contemplated road between this and King George's Sound; but it is also very far inland. I doubt whether an extensive grazing tract may be found nearer to water-carriage, or more convenient, than at York, where part of my ground is. It seems likely that a settlement may be established there shortly; for already the *nucleus* of it is formed; therefore, after having relinquished the grant which I had further to the south of the Avon, I was glad to get hold of any near York.—That which I have, of 5,000 acres, belonged to one who has abandoned the colony; the remaining part I took on a river, supposed to be the issuing of the Avon from the hills on the western plain: I chose this lot because the ground is good, which is more than I knew of any other place at that time; it is not above forty miles from this, and may be reached without either crossing or touching upon the mountains. Time

pressed, and I was obliged to make *some* selection, or lose my opportunity.

Land *now* is not to be given or exchanged by Government; it must be purchased, at not less than five shillings an acre—a sad loss to us. It is very difficult to save meat here in spring and autumn, much more so than in the heat of summer; the “blow-flies” are not so busy then, or perhaps they are encouraged by the moisture generated at the other seasons. When we have any considerable quantity of fresh meat (which is not often the case) we put it in pickle. Winter meat keeps very well. “Game?”—We have ducks—the wild turkey bird of the bustard kind—and quails; and the gallinule, or water-hen: and there *may* be many other game birds unknown to us, as they have so many places of concealment.

The cockatoos are gregarious and migratory: at some periods of the year, few are to be seen; at other times, they are seen in large and frequent flocks—I have heard of fifty kangaroos together; and have seen fifteen in company. We have rats and mice too; the largest of the former I have met here was about the size of a “*cub*” rat with you, but not so rough in the hair; in every other respect apparently the same; where they came from I leave others to determine or dispute about. Wild dogs are the next “game” you *start* in your letter.—They are not numerous, and are seldom seen in daylight. Since my flock has

come home, however, I hear of them more frequently.

James went to the landing-place, a few nights ago, on hearing a noise in the boat, when a wild dog rushed out of it and ran off. The natives sometimes domesticate them, and there seems to be almost as great a variety of them here as with you ; some are like little black and white *collies* ; many of them yellow and large ; our dogs howl whenever one of them comes near the house.

You wish to know the size and appearance of the trees here. They are of all sizes. Sometimes you see one like an old father, with his family of striplings around him. The colour of the foliage is green, the appearance of the bark various. To begin with our most valuable timber—the mahogany ;—its bark is of a reddish brown colour, and runs in continuous slips from top to bottom. The red gum tree has a rough scaly bark, of a dusky brown or reddish colour. The white or blue gums, (there seems to be a confusion about the names,) have a bark not unlike that of beech, of a light slate-colour, and smooth ; some on the high ground have a tinge of a rusty colour mixed with French white. And the banksia has a hard, grey, gravelly-looking bark, formed of little rough particles. Can you imagine a tree composed of coarse granite?—such is the banksia. The wattle—what shall I compare it to ? the Portugal laurel is the nearest in resemblance that I can think of.

We have also the swamp or the oak, (*casuarina*), and the cabbage or beef-wood tree, with a splendid orange blossom. These are our principal trees and large shrubs; the three first bear seed-vessels like acorns. The banksia is also called honeysuckle tree, from a sweet-tasting substance which is contained in its flowering cone. The wattle bears seed like a long pea-pod. There are vines bearing grapes in the botanical garden. The casuarina is excellent timber for the lathe, and our mahogany is beautiful for furniture: specimens of it have been sent home. The bark of the wattle, and of others, is good for tanning; the red gum tree produces gum in abundance; the broom tree, zamia, grass tree, wattle, *hakea*, and others, also produce gum like the Arabic. The large grass tree (*zanthoria hastilis*), yields a powerful cement; you will see it on the stone hatchets which I send you. There may be many other things of which we have not yet found out the peculiar properties.

Many persons are trying to salt fish, which are very numerous in the river about and below Perth, as you must have seen by one of my letters, in which I mentioned our having taken 10,000 at one draught of the seine; these are of the kind called herrings, but do not look very like them; they make a noise when out of the water, and on that account are also called trumpeters. The rack, or king fish, is as large as salmon; the snapper, or bream, (a deep-sided fish, not unlike

the roach,) the mullet, a thick-shouldered, blunt-headed fish, the silver fish, (perch,) and the guard fish, sometimes come up the river. There is another species, somewhat of the nature of an eel, with a sharp spine which it can erect at pleasure; this is caught only in the fresh water, and is called a cobbler; a kind resembling it in salt water is named cat-fish. Perch will take no bait except the shrimps which are found about stumps of trees and logs of timber in the river. The snake-necked turtle sucks your bait off most ingeniously. We have the cray-fish from two to six inches long, and clams in abundance. These are all the productions of our river as far as we are yet acquainted with them. There are crabs in the salt water, different in shape from yours, and so very daring, that they have seized me by the foot frequently when pushing boats over the flats. Neither lobsters nor oysters have been found, though the *shells* of the latter are very numerous about the flats, and in Melville Water. Of the natives I have not heard or seen any thing of late, yet we do not trust our cattle in any distant place with less than two herds, and the settlers over the hills have a few soldiers allowed them for their protection. White ants are troublesome; these usually carry on their operations under the cover of a hard clay mound, which can with difficulty be entered even by the force of a hatchet. You

see nothing outside to indicate their presence but a little brown streak of clay—the covered way by which they make their approaches; they never volunteer their appearance.

24th.—I have hired two *Irish* men to split palings, at 10s. a hundred (the paling is four feet six inches long, and from four to six inches broad); they commenced this morning, and have already cut down a tree three feet six inches in diameter, cross cut one length, split it into convenient sizes by wedges, and are now splitting out the paling with a knife, as you may have seen laths split. The tree is of the red gum species, and splits well, each pale from half an inch to an inch thick. Experienced men sometimes split from 200 to 300 a day, so they can earn a good deal of money; but on the other hand they buy their provisions from their employers.

I have always considered my *own* countrymen peculiarly happy in hitting off and applying a metaphor, though its frequent confusion is, perhaps, the principal cause of the bulls so liberally attributed to them: an instance of the ready *application* of a very whimsical metaphor amused me this morning.

“Hah, my joker,” exclaimed Paddy Burn, as he drove a wedge home with peculiar effect into a large block of the tree. “Are you making him laugh, Paddy?” said Jack Galway. “Laugh, is

it," rejoined Paddy, "by my troth I'm making him split his sides laughing." This is *genuine* humour.

Mr. M'Dermott has been here to-day, and wanted me to buy Van Diemen's Land sheep at 3*l.* a piece. I am putting down about half a rood of maize (Indian corn) to try it once more, and shall have about a rood of Caffre corn ; it will bring in the ground if it does nothing else. It is surprising how rapidly the ground here becomes baked on the top into a hard crust, which young vegetable fibres can scarcely penetrate. On raking and breaking it, we found several Indian corn shoots quite doubled under it, without being able to force their way through. Some of my strawberry plants are in blossom. My neighbours are brewing beer from sugar ; less than one pound to a gallon will do ; and we have this article at 3*d.* to 4*d.* per lb. People talk of giving beer to servants instead of spirits, as the Government has seen the impolicy of forcing settlers to give regulated rations of spirits as well as of provisions.

27*th.*—The two Messrs. Burgess crossed the river here this morning, "kangarooing;" I accompanied them. We saw four kangaroos and five wallabees, and got three chaces ; but the dogs killed only one wallabee, weighing sixteen pounds.

28*th.*—The superstition which the ancients had about certain trees gushing out blood when pointed at by the axe, may have been originated

from the observation, that gum trees emit, when wounded, a stream of reddish fluid of a consistence not unlike thick blood \*. I got a considerable quantity of it to-day from the veins of a tree which I rolled up in my hands like pitch ; —I shall send it in the *next box*.

There are a hundred plants, flowers, shrubs, &c., that I have not the names of, nor do I know how to describe them. One very abundant plant is called wild carrot : we have the dock, penny-royal, trefoil, sorrel, rib grass, fern, flax (native), which is pretty abundant, burnet, yarrow, sow-thistle, moss (the *hygrocrocis*), sedum, buttercup, eringo, wyay or native yarn, davisia, and several blue, white, red, and yellow climbers and creepers, anigozanthus, orobus solis, chrysanthemum, primroses, daisies, rockets, orchis, cardinal, sweet pea, and a beautiful purple flower, which looks as if it were trimmed with lace, and called here the lace flower, and many others.

I sometimes think of making a *hortus siccus* of all these flowers ; but they are too transient, and I am so much occupied, that I have not hitherto been able to accomplish it. Many beautiful shrubs and flowers are now in bloom, of which I must mention the black wattle, which bears a yellow blossom resembling that of the laburnum at a

---

\* Ater et alterius sequitur de cortice sanguis.



distance, but much finer. The hills are generally of the granite formation; but they are frequently covered with vegetation and trees up to their very summits. At this time of the year, spring, you find very luxuriant grass on them. Mr. Drummond says he counted fifty-four varieties of native grasses, most of them perennial; but the most abundant grass is annual: he says there are many varieties of the British genera, but that few, if any, of the species are similar.

This is a healthy climate; the heat is well suited to me, and I do not perceive it has enervating effects on any one. The mornings, evenings, and nights, are always cool enough; and very often the land and sea breezes (the latter particularly) make even the middle of the day in Midsummer quite cool.

*Oct. 4th.*—I shot and skinned a bittern this day; it is the *ghost* of a bird, its body not so large as that of a pigeon, yet it measures from the point of the bill to the tip of the toes, as the skin now hangs, no less than two feet eight inches; it is, in fact, a great long tube of feathers. Mr. Browne made me an offer of a mare for 50*l.*, which I accepted; and I rode from his house on the first horse (for every mare is a horse) which has *called me master* in this colony.

*5th.*—On my return home, after remaining at Mr. Brockman's last night, in consequence of flood in the river, I found my men washing the

sheep preparatory to shearing. As to the weather in general, we have had much more rain and cold this winter than we experienced last year. September and October seem to be the months of flood, for although there may be more rain in the earlier months, yet the thirsty soil then absorbs it; but now it is satisfied even to saturation, and every drop tends to the swelling overflow of our river.

Viewed my wheat on the land where I had potatoes last year: it is upwards of five feet high. Got a good specimen of a red root, which must have singular properties, as both pigs and cockatoos seem to be fond of it,—have planted cucumber seed and melon to-day, and got potatoes dug. The splitters finished one tree, and have commenced another, which they managed to let fall upon a tent I had put up for them—it has been woefully torn. In one of your letters you speak of lining the boxes with tin; it is useful on the voyage to keep out cock-roaches and vermin; and it is very useful here to keep out mice and white ants, which are destructive if not well watched. I should have lost considerably but for the lining of tin; the white ants entered at the bottom of a chest, crept up the sides, and got under the tin at one corner where it did not fit well. I bought a tinued chest to-day to keep sugar in, and there issues from it a constant stream of small black ants across the floor to a hole on the

other side of the room, each carrying a grain of the sugar: these are so minute that you scarcely notice them; but by treading, burning, and scalding, I have nearly banished them.

Dined to-day with Mr. Burgess on a "wallabee," the result of our own chase; it was roasted whole, and stuffed, and tasted not unlike hare. We have some artichokes looking strong and luxuriant, much more so than any I recollect to have seen at *home*. Beans are podding well, though the general opinion here is that they will not succeed with us as a crop.

\* \* \* \* \*

29th.—Yoked my team this morning and harrowed the wheat in the flat ground, which had been rather roughly broken up. I think it will answer, though it appears a rude process to subject grown wheat to. I have two, or perhaps three acres ready for the plough, that is, cleared from black boys (dwarf grass trees), which are grubbed out of it; the root of these is a knobby woody hemp, with roots very like heather.

I have just finished dinner (one o'clock)—every thing at table was the produce of the farm; corned mutton, green peas, new potatoes, sugar-loaf cabbage, radishes, and lettuce. Afterwards I superintended the burning of trees on the ground, which we shall commence to plough on Monday. Our practice, after the trees have been consumed, is to plough the ashes in, and let

the ground lie fallow. I have been greatly puzzled in laying out the boundary line between Lamb and myself, my pocket compass being incorrect. We are much in want of assistance from the Surveyor's Office ; being left to mark out the lines ourselves, we may have laid the foundation of much future litigation. The settlers could lay the lines themselves if they had good instruments, but even those in the Surveyor's Office are not to be depended on.

*Sunday, 30th.*—I recollect we sometimes were annoyed at home with a host of kitchen visitors on Sundays, but hardly expected this nuisance here : there have been nineteen here to-day with my servants ; the last only passed at nine at night, and I have just heard a sound which indicates the approach of *another* visitor by no means welcome, namely, a native dog. I have been *watching* for him, but fear to shoot some of my neighbours' dogs by mistake in the dark.

Referring to your letter of the 22nd December, 1831, inquiring about *tobacco*.—It grows well here, but requires too much labour to pay as a crop in our present state ; at a future time it may do well. As to coming here—I am still reluctant in giving advice to any one on the subject. It is a serious responsibility to hold out strong inducement, when success depends so much upon the taste, bodily fitness, and preparation for it. To come here costs much ; a considerable sum also

is further necessary to support you until you can maintain yourself. Land must be paid for, if from Government, at the rate of five shillings an acre. If you bring servants, the expense of keeping them is considerable, and without them, what can a single individual effect? Indentured servants become masters. No matter what damage they do, how careless they are, sober or drunken, idle or industrious, impudent or respectful, well or ill, you must keep them and satisfy every demand on the *instant*, or off they go to a magistrate and make a complaint. "Sir, I want a hat, a coat, waistcoat, a shirt, trowsers, stockings," and any thing, or every thing, they please, not to say *shoes*, of which they will wear a pair in two months. If the master replies, "I'll get you what you want when I go next time to town" (or whatever he thinks most conciliatory), the rejoinder is, "But I want it now, and I'll not work till I get it." I do not say that this has actually occurred with me; but I give it as a fair specimen of the habit of indentured-servants here.

Two or three stout hard-working brothers, or a father with a grown family, able and willing to assist him, with some money to establish themselves in rough comfort and plenty, would be independent in a few years; but there must be no squeamishness as to food, nor daintiness as to luxuries; it is a plodding matter-of-fact business-like and hard-working life, until you get yourself

established ; with very little of that romance and adventure about it which is so tempting and alluring to young minds. Yet it *has* its pleasures ; but it is quite right that people should prepare themselves for what it really is. I am still unwilling to recommend emigration to any one ; for the sort of life is so different from that at home, that many might be discontented with it, and blame the adviser instead of themselves. I had made up my mind to endure every kind of hardship and privation for three years at least. Yet here, at the end of two years, I live almost as well as I could wish, and certainly lead a healthier and happier and less anxious life, now that the first struggle is over. As to the relative eligibility of this place and America, pray consult the "Quarterly," especially that number in which there is discussion about the relative advantages ; I forget in which number it is ; and, in the first number of the Transactions of the Geographical Society, you will also find something on the subject. If our Government succeeds in getting the purchase-fee of five shillings an acre taken off for a few years, then settlers will come here more readily. This cannot for a long time be much of a commercial, or any thing but an agricultural or pastoral settlement, as there are no large navigable rivers traversing the country, and affording an outlet from the interior by water.

*Nov. 1st.*—Leaving my little team at work to-

day, I went out with the youngest Mr. Burgess to look for a kangaroo, and had a fine chace after one; the dogs killed it within 200 yards of us, in a stream of water; my puppy barked, and bit, and pulled, and did what he could; but it was the first he had seen killed, and we could not expect more at his *coup d'essai*. He promises well; we carried the kangaroo on our backs, turn about, for seven miles; this was a matter of some toil, for it weighed eighty pounds: however, I shall have some days' fresh provisions. On our way home, I shot a duck on the wing, and found that it had a nest with ten eggs. As it was not mortally wounded, I brought duck and eggs with me, and have her now sitting in a cage.

2nd.—A day of high wind, from N. E., with occasional heavy showers of rain, faint thunder and lightning; yet my little team ploughed from breakfast till dinner-time one third of an acre.

Do you recollect my having mentioned, some time ago, the murder of an outsettler on the Canning River by the natives? One of these, called Ya-gan, identified (on oath by a boy who escaped) as the principal actor, who took the spears from his companions and deliberately drove them one by one into the deceased, (who had become entangled in a hedge while trying to escape,) has been taken. The Government offered a reward for the apprehension of this Ya-gan, and some days ago he and two others, almost equally concerned, were seized

by two boatmen, and brought to Perth : they had been fishing, and were enticed into the boat, and there secured ; they have been sent to Carnac, where they are to suffer solitary confinement, and be taught our language. One of them escaped by swimming and diving across the river, where it is fully a mile in breadth.

4th.—Walked to Perth, where I found Captain Irwin ; went with him to survey the canal and intended plans for deepening a passage, to avoid the flats in the river ; in the shallows I caught two mullets with my hands.

About this day two years we came to the colony.—What a change now ! It looks like a settled country : rural sights and sounds every where ; houses, crops, flocks, herds, fences ; cows lowing, dogs barking, cocks crowing, and geese cackling.

I have added to my stock, having just purchased nineteen ewes, at 50*s.* per pair ; the breed is the compound produce of Leicester and Merino and Van Diemen's Land ; and five ewe lambs at 35*s.* I have now fifty-nine sheep, which cost me 121*l.*

5th.—My mare strayed away yesterday evening ; and I got a thorough drenching while looking in vain for her. This day I found her among a tract of black-wattle trees. Without another servant, I cannot manage to keep all my present stock. I already feel *les embarras des richesses*. Just as I found the mare, I missed the sheep this



evening, and had a hunt for them and my cows, which were quarrelling afterwards all night, and breaking down their stalls and plaister. Two cattle-keepers, one for cows and the other for sheep, are expensive, but unavoidable. This evening has become very wet and cold, accompanied by thunder, lightning, and gusts of wind roaring in the trees like the shouts of an agitated multitude; yet I walked through a hollow in search of bitterns, water-hens, or anything else to fire at. This pool of water (in Lamb's and Wright's grants) is about 400 yards broad: there is water in it, perhaps, from June to January; tall flags, bulrushes, and coarse grasses grew in it; some almost so high as to conceal a person walking in it. I shot a cockatoo!

6th.—The natives, who are confined on Carnac Island, have given a rude sketch of some part of the country: they make Lennard's brook identical with the Avon, and represent some large river flowing to the N. W., which has different names in different districts; but they do not seem to know whence it arises, nor where it debouches into the sea; they also sketch a large unexplored lake, or cul-de-sac, to the north, in the interior, but are not able to give any idea of the distances or relative situations of them. It is doubtful yet how far this can be depended on, for the person who sought the information may have given the clue; and as they are expert mimics

perhaps they were but echoing back his suggestions.

8th.—Mr. Revely's mill is in forwardness; the water-wheel upright with horizontal shaft. He is cutting most excellent granite millstones in the hills behind this place.

I have not mentioned the weather for the last week:—Warm on the 12th and 13th. Cooler on the 14th. Clouds and a breeze on the morning of the 16th, which ended in rain that night. Cold, with occasional showers, on the 17th; thunder in the evening. The 18th fine again: and I should have mentioned that on Thursday, the Lieutenant Governor (Irvin), Messrs. Rowe, Morgan, R. Browne, Dale, and some others, set out on an excursion over the hills to York. I had intended to go with them, but business prevented me: they are all mounted; another party speaks of going to the Upper Murray district, as they call that of which Captain Bannister reported so favourably.—Drawing logs in the early part of the day; got melon seeds sown, and several beds arranged in the garden. Soon after dinner I received Captain Irvin here; he is greatly delighted with the lands over the hill, and says there is a fine reach of the river, or deep reservoir, opposite his grant. He tells me that the natives that were imprisoned on Carnac Island have completely outwitted their guards; a boat was incautiously suffered to remain at the island before

night, when they managed to get into it, and were miles off before their escape was discovered; and as there was no boat for pursuit, they reached the land. Their boat was found at Woodman's Point, with one oar; but no natives have been seen since. This occurrence is extremely provoking, as a knowledge of their language would soon have been acquired by us; and they were rapidly learning to make themselves intelligible. I understand they were very accurate in describing the rivers which lie to the north. Mr. Lyon, who superintended the native prisoners at Carnac, says they describe several rivers to the north; one of them large, and abounding with fish; but they could not be understood in their description of distances. It seems that the land is all parcelled out into districts among themselves, and that they rarely travel far from their own homes. The chief of *this* district is called "Worragonga." Ya-gan is the son of Worragonga. I write this from recollection; but it is no great matter if I should have made a false heraldry in blazoning his pedigree.

20th.—After dinner, I took a cruise of observation round the neighbouring farms. The crops look remarkably well this year; my wheat is the earliest here (nothing like early sowing, especially on the uplands). Took tea at Mr. Bull's, and afterwards called where a mill is at work. A messenger brought me a great letter with an awful-looking seal: it contained a pamphlet from Colonel

Hanson, which he published in India, about this country and Van Diemen's Land. He seems greatly delighted with the society of this place in comparison with that of the other colony, and recommends it to his Indian friends, as far superior in every respect: perhaps a copy may find its way to England. I know not what delay this vessel may make, and must get my journals ready.

27<sup>th</sup>.—I have got most of my potatoes dug and put into a pit, with a good covering of clay; sold some at 5<sup>d</sup>. a pound. Am at a stand with my hay for want of a cart. All my pigs have disappeared; spent this evening in an unsuccessful search after them—my mare also cannot be found.

28<sup>th</sup>.—This day is the commencement of my harvest; got some beautiful wheat cut down—it does one's heart good to see the great sheaves set up in shocks. Only a small patch has been cut (twenty-two yards by twelve) where it was most ripe, and upon this small space there are five large shocks, each containing twelve sheaves; the ears are large and full: it will probably yield at the rate of forty bushels an acre.

The Trimmers have laid the foundation of a fortune by having a flock of prime Merinos brought from England; they have now about five hundred over the hills. A prime Merino ram and half a dozen Merino ewes soon increase, and improve other breeds. M'Dermot procured, at great

**expense**, a few prime Saxony sheep, which he **says** are far superior to any other kind.

*Saturday, Dec. 1st.*—Prepared a threshing-floor; got some wheat threshed—very fine grain, and yielding well; but many ears are too green, which arises from the mixture of seed. Planted some potatoes in low ground for experiment; also transplanted some cabbages, mangel-wurzel, and red beet. I fear the seed which you sent is not good; Edward has tried some of the cabbage-seed without success: it probably fermented on the passage.

*9th.*—I only closed my last despatches for you yesterday, to go by Van Diemen's Land; it is possible that this letter may reach you first, as there may yet be a more direct conveyance. I have heard that a soldier's wife has been wounded by a spear from the natives in the Canning River—the first time they have molested a woman (a bad trait), and this outrage is likely to bring on general hostility.

Bread from our new wheat is excellent; my little mill grinds well; but hand-mills are tedious and laborious. I examined the mill which Mr. R. is putting up at Perth, and am surprised that the same plan is not adopted at home; he says it is the common construction of mills in Italy, that its machinery is less expensive, and that it requires less water than those we have been accustomed to. The water passes from the reservoir

through a wooden trunk about a foot square, sixty or seventy yards long, at the end of which is a copper tube two and a half inches in diameter, through which the water gushes. There is great pleasure in every approach we make towards our own support.

10th.—In sinking a well, we have found water at the depth of twelve feet ; the strata are vegetable mould, blue and black clays, white or dun-coloured clay, buff coloured or loamy clay, yellowish sandy loam, and dun-coloured loamy sand, on which they were working when the water first appeared.

I have been obliged to have another servant to attend the cows.

11th.—A baker came this morning for some wheat, and obviously wanted to make a large profit. I would not supply him, except with a few bushels for his own use, at 4*d.* per pound cleared. We are badly off for broad sharp hooks, which are better than sickles ; send me some by the next vessel. Few persons have had bread for some time past here ; so that I eat some new bread and fresh-churned butter-milk with great *gout* to-day.

12th.—The dogs killed a long-tailed, yellow-spotted guava, and a black one : the first had eggs. I shot a quail and a white cockatoo, and after this sport went to dine with Mackie, having to swim across the river as my boat was not at

my side of it. On my return, I looked out for my boat, when lo, being at cross purposes, it had changed sides again ; I had to swim the second time—how fortunate that there are neither alligators nor sharks in the river !

13th.—Captain Irwin dined with me this day, and while we were at dinner several of my friends popped in. I understand that a petition has been sent to council from Freemantle, praying that the court should be held alternately there and in Perth.

16th.—A boat came up bringing news of the arrival of a small schooner (the *Governor Bourke*), in which I returned, but did not arrive at Perth till nine at night on Monday. I took down with me some new wheat, the first in the market ; sold one bushel for 1*l.* ; which some praised, and others blamed me for selling so cheap. I sold at the same time eight pounds of butter, at 3*s.* per pound, and could not help marvelling at the small size of the *luxury* which sold for 24*s.*, compared with the bulk of the *necessary*, which only brought 20*s.* Much money might be made of a dairy here.

18th.—I went to the postmaster's, hardly expecting letters ; but imagine my delight and surprise at getting letters from my dear father and you, of dates from the 1st of August to the 29th of November, 1831, and half a dozen papers of of different dates—one so late as the 10th of

March, 1832. I have had letters from you of later dates before, but these explain many allusions and circumstances in the subsequent letters which I was not clear about. I walked up to Guildford, though the day was excessively warm, and intended to have reached home by night to con over my letters in undisturbed comfort; but being wearied, I was forced to accept a bed on the way; but reached home for breakfast the following morning with a good appetite for it.

One word about health. You seem to consider that we must be very bilious here, and that we must consequently use much medicine. I have not taken any medicine whatever since I left Ireland, nor have I required it; so much for this climate.

It is fortunate that some of my letters reached you before Captain S. and his mate (who were never higher than Perth, if so far) arrived in Dublin, else you would have been unhappy about my situation here. What was Freemantle then? a bare, barren-looking district of sandy coast;—the shrubs cut down for fire-wood, the herbage trodden bare, a few wooden houses, many ragged-looking tents and contrivances for habitations,—our hotel, a poor public house, into which every one crowded,—our colony, a few cheerless dissatisfied people with gloomy looks, plodding their way through the sand from hut to hut to drink grog, and grumble out their discontents to each

---



other ; a stranger (a sailor in particular) could not admire the settlement. Now there is a town laid out in regular streets of stone houses with low walls, and in some places palisades in front ; two or three large well kept inns or hotels, in which you can get clean beds and good private rooms. The soil there is loam resting upon a stratum of easily worked limestone, and possessing a fertility almost exceeding belief, with abundant water near the surface. You inquire "if there be any fish in the rivers." I thought I had mentioned my having assisted in taking ten thousand at one haul near Perth ; up here they are not numerous, or rather I cannot take them without a net : you say "winter will bring them ;" remember I have often called this a topsy turvy country as compared with home ; the fish are abundant in the river in *summer* when the salt water makes its way up at Guildford ; the people on one occasion were actually astonished at the *noise* of the fish leaping and rushing up the river in multitudes, and this I must have mentioned in my Journal, for I have ever since my arrival given you a pretty copious narrative of my own life, which, though not dressed up and embellished to entertain others, yet gives you the true and homely picture of a working settler in his *every day clothes*. You may expect with certainty a publication from Governor Stirling, or under his authority, which will supersede the necessity of giving private communications to

the public. I have transmitted to you my only journal in notes, rude, unfinished, and disjointed, as transactions occurred. In your letters you inquire with respect to the new colony in South Australia; your arguments about it are mere theory. You wonder at our difficulty in crossing the hills, and attribute it to their height; I have explained that also:—suppose it not one hill, but a continuation of hilly country for 45 or 50 miles; and you will see that it required great perseverance to penetrate beyond them; there appeared no end to them; Dale was the first who succeeded; after repeated excursions he got a glimpse of Mount Bakewell at a distance—a remarkable mountain, and higher than the rest; he pressed for it as a land-mark, and was rewarded by finding the Avon at its base; this river was then in its flooded state, which naturally led him to believe it much more important than it is; indeed all were disappointed with respect to the river, but the country has stood the test of examination, and fulfilled the expectations of the most sanguine.

You write “of snows melting from a mountain ten thousand feet high to the south;” there is no such elevation here, you might strike a cipher off the number. However, the hills are higher there than with us. At King George’s Sound they have very little frost; but I am not certain about snow. I do not think there is as much good soil there as here; but I must not decry it, not having been there,

and of course knowing nothing of it from personal observation. We have received a French book "on the Penal Colonies of Great Britain," written by M. Ernest de Blosseville, who sent a copy "to the Hon. Secretary of the Literary Society at Perth, Swan River;"—unfortunately there is no such person to acknowledge his civilities. I have not yet had time to read the book. He wishes some one here to write a critique, but we have something else to do besides writing or scribbling essays; we are all waiting anxiously until the despatches shall have arrived announcing the governor's reception in England, *for upon this depends our speedy or remote success.*

22nd.—I have sold two more bushels of wheat, twenty shillings per bushel; and I have just been looking at a market note in an Irish paper; some of the prices, put in a juxtaposition with ours, remind us of our new state; eggs with you four-pence per dozen, with us four-pence each; butter eight-pence per pound of sixteen ounces, with us one shilling a pound; potatoes three-half-pence a stone, with us five-pence per pound; beef and mutton three-pence per pound, with us one shilling and six-pence; nails\* are now selling at a shilling a pound; scales, weights, and beams in great demand; ploughs and

---

\* Were these in the market note? if so, they were probably intended for exportation to those colonies where ostriches breakfast on them.—Ed.

timber, chains, metal pots, sithe blades, reaping hooks (strong broad sharp ones). I lately paid three shillings each for very indifferent sickles; potato forks and riddles are extremely scarce; a few sash planes, ploughshares, camp covers, frying pans, cow and sheep bells, knives, some Britannia metal tea pots, zinc milk dishes and pails, buttons for windows are wanted—these hints may be useful. Got my oats and wheat put into ricks to-day, and shall turn the cattle on the stubble. This day was very warm, but in the evening I was forced to put on my coat; that is my only thermometer—coat *heat*.

23rd.—News: the *Cornwallis* has arrived; there is a mare on board for me.

25th.—Christmas-day; this morning I received a letter from Mr. \* \* \* saying that another mail had been discovered on board the vessel from Sidney, and I got no less than seven other letters and twenty-seven newspapers. This is a Christmas-box indeed, and a Christmas trick too, or rather a frequent and inexcusable one, to keep back the mail until the cargo is disposed of, lest something might appear to spoil the market. I am quite bewildered to know which letter I shall turn to first; I have dipped into all—my ideas are in confusion; it will take some time to let my mind settle into clear tranquillity.

I thank God for the good health you all seem to enjoy, and I thank you all from my heart for your affectionate remembrances.

After service to-day, I went to Mr. F's to eat my Christmas dinner ; there were Mr. and Mrs. Shaw, Mr. E., Messrs. Burgess, and your humble servant. I have heard that the *Jolly Rambler* has also arrived from Sidney—there may be more news for me,—what a glutton I am becoming !

26th.—Have been reading over all your last letters a second time ; they appear to have come from Sidney to the Cape, and thence here ; we have had few vessels from Sidney ; some of my letters must have gone astray, as you seem only to have heard incidentally about the spear thrown at me by the natives, and some other affairs which have been nearly forgotten by me. I must now tell you about the spear. One day (as children's tales commence) I was standing in the parlour between two windows, when I was startled by a smart heavy blow on the window frame at my left side ; thinking it a practical joke of some passing friend, I went out leisurely and was surprised to see two natives running away. On looking at the window, I found the point of a spear buried about two inches in the corner of the window frame ; the spear lay under the window. I was, as you may suppose, more satisfied to see it there than sticking in my side, for which it seemed well aimed. This occurred long ago, and I have never seen a native here since ; it was the celebrated Ya-gan, who so complimented me.

27th.—This has been one of the hottest days I have experienced in this climate ; yet I was out kangaroo hunting from six in the morning till three with Mr. Burgess, and walked nearly eighteen miles, carrying gunpowder flask and shot belt. If we did not carry a kangaroo into the bargain, it was for a *particular reason* ; there was no shelter, and little shade, yet we never ceased walking except to rest the dogs a little, and I have often found it as hot grouse shooting in Ireland. The thermometer would not (there) have stood within many degrees as high as here, but that is not a true criterion of heat. In this climate the temperature at night is always pleasant and cool, sometimes even cold : by *pleasant*, I mean that degree of heat which is agreeable ; by *cool*, that which obliges you to put on warmer clothing ; by *cold*, that which requires a fire, or exercise to make you comfortable. The nights here when the heat compels you to throw off all covering except the sheet, are not of more frequent occurrence than in England.

The marked difference between this climate and that of India is, that the nights there are insupportable as the days, without any bracing intermission from heat. I have just stated what they are here.

Saw nine native huts to-day framed of the bark of a tree, such as I sent you ; each hut had its fire ;

there were the *organic remains* of kangaroos and other animals, and two or three broken spears and shavings, as if they had been repairing them : we saw many of their footsteps, but were well pleased to find those who had impressed them “ not at home.”

29th.—Captain Irwin has come up to spend a day or two at this place : he is very fond of rural life, and talks of remaining here half the week. I bathed at nine o'clock at night.

Late arrivals have again lowered the prices of provisions—meat particularly. One of our merchants is selling salt-beef at  $4\frac{1}{2}d.$  a pound at Fremantle, wine at  $5s. 6d.$  per gallon ; and clothes and shoes have fallen in price, in consequence of recent importations.

Jan. 1st, 1833.—One year seems to be distinct from another ; yet where is the boundary ? —They touch each other so nearly that we can hardly separate them. The last moment of the last year was remarkable for being unusually cold, though the midst of our summer. I assure you I looked at the kitchen-fire very longingly last night before bed-time. Some of my oats, which have been cut, were seven feet high, well headed, and heavy : they were produced upon ground merely ploughed over once, and harrowed without manure. A ewe has lambed to-day ; there are now sixty-two sheep and lambs in all : two or three have gone blind, but from what cause I know not.

Somebody in Sydney threatens to send a cargo of sheep and cows here—I hope he will—but when?

My men requested a bottle of rum for new year's night. I sent it; and they are now enjoying themselves over it. Some questions have already arisen here about executions. No person can be got to act as sheriff. You could scarce believe what legal intricacies are familiar here, in this early stage of the settlement. Though it is a new country, settlers retain all their old manners, habits, prejudices, and notions of a sturdy, free, commercial, litigious people.

2nd.—Another cool clondy day: we had no such weather last summer. I walked this evening back to the Darling ranges, looking for a kangaroo: found only one; but the dog did not get a fair start. I had, however, the satisfaction of viewing an extensive prospect of interminable woods. Mount Eliza, which at Perth looks high, was scarcely observable from the spot where I stood. Saw a fire on the great plain of Quaran-tania, to the south.

4th.—Killed a kangaroo, a crow, and two pigeons yesterday. I suppose you think a crow very despicable as food; but I think it excellent. This day, however, I feasted at Mr. Irwin's, with a pretty large party; at which we had geese, fowls, and various vegetables, with a variety of wine—claret included. This I mention merely to note the improvement in our colonial comforts.



6th.—This has been a very warm day ; the men were obliged to lie by three hours in the middle of the day.

On reading the papers during this interval of rest, I perceived an account of hurricanes in the West Indies killing four thousand people ; inundations in the East Indies destroying ten thousand ; and in Ireland several deaths by lightning, and murders by the peasantry. When I read of these horrors (especially in Ireland), I congratulate myself :

“ Non quia vexari quenquam est jucunda voluptas,  
Sed quibus ipse malis careas, quia cernere suave est.”

As yet we have been happily exempt, in this blessed climate, from these visitations, physical or moral.

14th.—Here is the interval of a week ; the busiest and most harassing which I have had since my arrival.

You are aware of my holding a court twice a week ; but this week I have been obliged to sit from Tuesday to Saturday, day after day, commencing at ten, and sitting some days until seven ; for people are as fond of litigation here as in the parent state. One jury case took up a whole day : it was an action for a conspiracy and assault, and against eight defendants, each of whom addressed the court ; damages laid at 500*l*. The suit was brought by a Sydney man, who had

chartered a vessel ; verdict for defendants. Another action by the same man against Henderson, (captain of the *Cornwallis*,) for running against his boat ; damages laid at 500*l.* ; verdict 40*s.* There were several other serious and nice actions ; two were by part owners of a ship, for 500*l.* each, shares of profits made in several voyages. I am tired of law, and in need of rest. No wonder, as I have been sleeping for a week on a brick floor, with a carpet bag for a pillow. Got the well dug about two feet deeper, and sunk a barrel in it ; the water is cool and delicious at the depth of about sixteen feet. Found a diamond snake round a tree, it was almost five feet long ; skinned it, and have the skin in a bottle.

17*th.*—Went to some swampy ground full of springs to look for ducks ; shot a brace, besides a water hen and a cockatoo. I was actually driven out of the swamps by leeches, several of them sticking to my legs. I cannot compare these swamps to any marshes with which you are familiar ; perhaps a tract of ground covered with old willows and green weeds, with here and there open spaces of deeper water, is the nearest resemblance I can supply. Fine receptacles for wild ducks, of which the dogs sprung up a dozen to-day ; but I was so hemmed in by the trees, that I could not get a shot ; and not having room to look about me, I slipped up to the neck in a hole ; wetted my powder-flask, but kept my gun

dry : so terminated the day's sport. My new men going to turn out for higher wages, though one gets 2*l.* per month as shepherd, and the other 1*l.* per month as cowherd ; the former may go, especially as the sheep which I expected from Sydney have not arrived ; nor do the good people either there or at Van Diemen's Land appear in a hurry to send them, which is provoking, as a little exertion in this way, by Government or individuals, would soon render us an independent colony.

## VOYAGE.

LITIGATION—VOYAGE TO KING GEORGE'S SOUND—NEW ZEALANDERS  
—CARMAC ISLAND—CAPE LEWIN—OYSTER HARBOUR—INTER-  
VIEW WITH THE NATIVES.

*February 17th, 1833.—On board the Schooner  
Ellen, off Cape Naturaliste, Western Australia.*

WHEN there is most to record, it frequently happens that there are less means and fewer opportunities of doing it. I have led so busy a life since I last wrote, that I scarcely know what lee way I have made, nor how to bring it up. On *Tuesday the 5th*, I had no fewer than fifty cases in my list to dispose of; and these I got through on Wednesday evening. On the Thursday I made a fruitless effort to get down to Freemantle, but by delays and adverse winds was obliged to turn back. We had a New Zealander in the boat, and I took much interest in acquiring information from him relative to his country, which I obtained through the instrumentality of Captain Liddle of the *Thistle*, who speaks the New Zealand language. It appears that this man had fled

from his master, and come off in a trading ship, —a common practice. His manner, language, and appearance differed very much from my preconceived notions of the ferocity and cannibalism of the New Zealanders; and yet he acknowledges without hesitation the latter horrifying propensity and practice *in propria persona*. The countenance of this man, however, is pleasing and good-humoured; his manners obliging; his language very soft, even to effeminacy; his person large and full; and his limbs rounded and smooth: his name is Ech-to-to.

On pointing out to him one of the plants of this country resembling New Zealand flax, he called it Am-su-rah, and said it was the same sort of plant, but much smaller than that of his country. I shall not bore you with my imperfect attempts at his vocabulary further than to say, that his word expressive of dissent (synonymous with our “no”) is ca-oo-ue (the oo sounded like the French eu); and that the word “woman” he expressed by “wyena” (mind—not “hyena”).

\*            \*            \*            \*

The boxes of clothes have arrived; but those of a dress description are not in demand: indeed it would be incongruous to embark new settlers in the fopperies of dress, or to divert them in any way (beyond moderate recreation and the enjoyment of limited society) from the habits of the industry, and the objects of their emigration.—

*Luxuries* will come too soon; let them be preceded by comforts. When industry shall have facilitated the means of procuring a subsistence, the leisure thus obtained may be employed in extending the circle of our pleasures.

On the 10<sup>th</sup> I rode to Guildford; walked thence to Perth, which I did not leave until the 12<sup>th</sup>; at Mr. Leake's, and enjoyed the grand piano which Mrs. Leake, who had recently arrived, had brought with her.

The two natives of King George's Sound (who are on their return) were greatly delighted with the music; they danced the kangaroo dance, and did every thing in their power to show that they were pleased and grateful—"tank you mem, very pretty\*." Their dance appeared to be in imitation of the chase of the kangaroo, the motions of the animal, and the panting and gestures of the person in chase. This dance was divided into different scenes or parts; the movements differing a little in each part: sometimes the dancers

---

\* Savages in every part of the globe have a strong passion for dancing. Robertson the historian gives an interesting account of the love for this pastime evinced by the native Americans; and Raynal enters into a philosophical detail of this subject in his work on the East and West Indies. It is somewhat remarkable (observes the latter), that in the first ages of the world, and among savage nations, dancing should be an *imitative* art; and that it should have lost that characteristic in civilised countries, where it seems to be reduced to a set of uniform *steps* without meaning, &c. *Raynal*, vol. v., page 65.—EDITOR.

approached each other, then receded, traversed and changed sides, with a corresponding variation in gesture and exclamation. At intervals, they called out "get away, get away," and at each pause, "beraway, beraway," which latter word, one of them explained in this way:—white man say "hip, hip, hurra," black man say, "beraway, beraway." During the entire dance, they make a violent panting noise, hegh, hegh, hegh, hogha, hogha, hogha; these sounds guttural. Afterwards they seated themselves in arm-chairs, with the greatest self-complacency, and drank tea.

Their visit has been of great service, for many natives subsequently came into Perth and Freemantle, and intimated their desire to live on friendly terms, and to refrain from offering injury to us or our cattle. Gallypert thus describes his interview with them,—me wonka (tell) black man pear white man cow, white man yeep (sheep), white man kill black man;—black man no pear (spear) cow, no pear yeep, white man give black man jacket, towlyer, yerck (shirt) and bikket (biscuit) plenty; black man wonka (say) no pear no more.

On the 15th, we came on board the schooner in which I had undertaken to accompany the Lieutenant-Governor on a tour of inspection to Port Augusta and King George's Sound; and sailed on the following morning with a fair wind.

We had reached Cape Naturaliste, when the wind headed us, and obliged us to run back to Garden Island; where we went ashore on the evening of the 15th, and enjoyed a bivouac, in preference to our quarters on shipboard.

I wish you had a peep at us as we lay in the bush, with a canopy of trees over us,—our supper, fish, (speared for us by the natives,) with the accompaniment of crabs of our own catching.

On the 16th, we re-embarked; but the wind being still unfavourable, we anchored under shelter of Carmac Island, where we passed a most delightful day, rambling about the rocks, catching crabs with pointed sticks. Our men took some young *mutton birds* in the holes in which they burrow like rabbits; and the natives of our party begged hard to remain all night, in order to catch the old ones in their holes, which they do not enter before night-fall; but, as we intended to sail with the first of the land breeze, we made them sleep with ourselves on board, much to their regret.

17th.—A fine breeze all day: we were running parallel to the coast, but at a considerable distance, to clear Cape Naturaliste.

18th.—Abreast of the Cape; which is neither high nor bluff. The coast ten miles distant. We can perceive cattle in the valleys, and the first ridge of bare-looking hills in the back ground. Two fires are perceptible.



19th.—We are now opposite the part of the coast to which you seem to have turned your attention. It is bold and rocky, reminding me greatly of the Irish coast—more to be admired for the picturesque than trusted for its safety. It is probable that there may be many nooks, sounds, or bays, affording shelter, but they are not yet known.

It is a work of time, expense, and difficulty to explore the windings of a coast ; more an object for Government to accomplish, than for an individual to undertake. *You* conjecture that this is a desirable part of the continent to select for a settlement, but it may be long before this place shall be *located*, and a solitary settler would labour under many disadvantages in his isolation.

It would be very injudicious to choose an uninhabited district, when there are so many places here in which we can have the protection and comfort of society. A Robinson Crusoe kind of life may do very well in romance, but will not be pleasant in reality.

This must be obvious for many reasons ; and as we are now going with a nine-knot breeze and a heaving sea, I shall not be at the trouble of scribbling any thing in proof of it.

Last night the wind became unfavourable as we were rounding Cape Lewin, but on standing out a little we got a fair breeze off land, and so

held our course, purposing to call at Fort Augusta on our return.

26th.—We have been on shore for a week, and have now set sail again, having seen much that is interesting, but without an opportunity of recording it, until now; and even now you must be satisfied with a rapid sketch from recollection.

Early on the morning of the 20th, we rounded Bald Head, the promontory which forms the western head-land of the deep bay of King George's Sound, which appeared to me like Lough Swilly, and I greatly enjoyed the scene. We then proceeded N. and W. through the entrance into Prince's Royal Harbour, and at nine o'clock anchored opposite the settlement there, and on the succeeding morning were welcomed on shore by the clamouring "allaloo" (how d'ye do) of a dozen natives, who expressed the greatest joy at seeing their friends Maryate and Gallypert again. This day was passed by the Lieutenant-Governor in examining stores, and other official duties. I called on Messrs. Morley, Cheyne, Littleton, and some others, from whom we received the greatest kindness during our stay.

On Friday we went by boat, from Prince's Royal Harbour, across the Sound, up Oyster Harbour, to a farm lately occupied by Mr. Henty, on the King River, and here enjoyed a rich treat of some of the fine oysters, from the abundance of

which the harbour is so named; then proceeded thence to the Calgan River, which we ascended about six miles, but the navigation becoming impeded by barriers of rocks, we halted to bivouac round a cheerful fire, under a canopy of red gum trees, and were composing ourselves for the night, when Eye-nan (a native who had accompanied us) suddenly jumped up, exclaiming "Wigh (a snake\*) no good, no good." By torch-light, we killed a snake, which had been on the foot of this native, who signified to us that the bite would not be of serious injury, "men dik little," would make him a little sick. Next morning we walked higher up the river, which was here a running stream about twenty-five yards broad, crossed in several places by ledges of rock, where the natives had constructed ingenious weirs for taking fish, which appeared to be abundant. The scenery here is romantic, the soil on the banks tolerably good; but I understand that it does not continue so to any great distance. We returned down the river, and again indulged in an oyster feast, and proceeded to a small island, which a solitary convict had once attempted to cultivate. The effects of his toil appear in the grapes, cabbages, &c., which have now grown wild.

At five we reached the settlement, where we

---

\* Latet anguis in herbâ.

230 INTERVIEW WITH THE NATIVES.

dined with Doctor Littleton. Next day I visited the *farm* before breakfast with Captain Irwin, for the purpose of selecting a suburban grant in the vicinity. The *farm* is a tract of ground partly of clay, and partly of loamy quality, about a mile and a half from the settlement, where there are some acres of ground under cultivation, which have produced good wheat this year. I went out a second time, accompanied by a surveyor, and chose two lots of four acres each, one for Captain Irwin, the other for myself; the soil is peaty, with a small portion of sand. Can you imagine a sandy bog? If so, you may have a notion of this soil.

24th.—On this day (Sunday) many of the natives\* came into the barrack during divine service, of whom some remained all the time, and conducted themselves with great decorum. On Monday they were drawn up in line, and addressed in the following speech by Mr. Morley, the storekeeper, while we all looked most ludicrously grave.

Now now twonk, Gubbernor wonka me wonka black fellow,  
 Now attend, the Governor desires me to tell the black man  
           black fellow      pear      white man      white men  
 if the black man spear the white man the white men  
           poot.                      Black fellow queeple no good.      black  
 will shoot them. If a black man steal it is not good. If a black

---

\* Vide Appendix.

# INTERVIEW WITH THE NATIVES. 231

fellow peer black fellow no good. Black fellow  
man spear a black man it is not good. If the black man

plenty shake hand black fellow, no black fellow no queeple,  
be friendly with the black man, if the black man do not steal,

black fellow give him white man wallabees, wood come here,  
if the black man give the white man wallabees, bring wood,

water come here, white man plenty shake hand black man,  
and bring water, white man will befriend the black man,

plenty give it him bikket, plenty ehtah, plenty  
and give him plenty of biscuit, plenty to eat, and give him

blanket, arrack, tomahawk. Now now Gubbernor wonka me  
blankets, rice, tomahawk. Now the Governor desires me

give it him one guy black fellow one guy knaif.  
to give each black man one knife.

A knife was then suspended by a riband round  
the neck of each ; thus ended the ceremony, and  
they were dismissed, a set of wealthy and happy  
mortals.

## THE COLONY.

LEAVE KING GEORGE'S SOUND—FLINDER'S BAY—THE BLACK-  
WOOD RIVER—INTERVIEW WITH THE NATIVES—ARRIVAL OF  
THE MEROPE—ADVANCE OF THE COLONY.

*Hermitage, Swan River, March 9.*

HERE is a wide chasm in my diary, which I fear I shall not be able to close satisfactorily. Between hurry and bustle on land, (not to speak of a little squeamishness at sea,) my various occupations since I have landed, and interruptions at home, I have got most hopelessly into arrear; yet I *hope* to bring it up.

On the 26th ult. we left George's Sound at sunrise, Doctor Littleton, Mr. Cheyne, (with whom I had lived there,) Mr. Morley, and Mr. M'Cleod, of the 63rd, accompanying our original party, until we got into the Sound. We anchored in Flinder's Bay, and on the 28th went to Mr. Morley's house, which is prettily situated on the Blackwood, near its mouth. Here, on the floor of an uninhabited house, we spread our mattresses

and cloaks, and with the aid of a good fire made ourselves very comfortable.

The weather, during the whole period of our excursion, was about the temperature of an English spring; indeed, it is said that the thermometer at King George's Sound seldom rises above 82°.

*March 1st.*—We advanced up the Blackwood, and got fast on the flats, which we had some trouble to push over; there *is* a passage, but we missed it. On these flats we saw numbers of ducks, and upwards of a hundred swans—a good classical omen\*. The river above is deep and wide, the banks on either side rich and thickly covered with timber, principally red gum and mahogany. We ascended about twenty-two miles, returned to the same point next morning, and slept at Mr. Russel's. From this we walked to the settlement, about four miles, through thick forest, with a dense luxuriance of underwood, through which a pathway leading to the Vasse river has been recently cut. Most of the colonists here speak of going to settle at the Vasse when they can procure sheep, the land there being described as open and grassy, on a substratum of limestone. If this be so, it must be a fine tract of pasture land, continuing, in all probability, of

---

\* Mr. Moore probably alludes to this passage :—  
 "Cycnus in auguriis nautis gratissimus ales."—DOYLE, Jun.

the same quality to the Murray River. Yet this was thought at first a poor sandy district !

The river is inconsiderable, its mouth blocked up, and without shelter on the bay ; but it has many advantages. W had some intention of walking to it from the Blackwood, while the vessel was going round, (she could have picked us up there) ; but as that part was so recently explored, and so well laid down in charts, it did not possess sufficiently the interest of novelty to induce us to take a step which might have been attended with many inconveniences, if the ship should have been prevented from coming round in time. I did not mention that we brought six natives, at their urgent request, from King George's Sound, to visit Swan River ; but as we were preparing to embark, one of them was missing. On searching for him I suddenly found myself among a large body of natives, who, seeing me hesitate, called out 'abba,' an expression of friendly salutation. I immediately joined them, and found our runaway among the number : he declared his intention of remaining some time on a visit with them, and then going by land to King George's Sound : as they were numerous, well armed, and powerful, yet good-humoured-looking men, we deemed it prudent to proceed without them. If he should reach his tribe in safety, the circumstance may be of great service to us, as he may be the means of opening a friendly intercourse between us and the



natives of this district. Whales frequent King George's Sound. Mr. Larkin, who went with us to examine the Sound, in order to ascertain whether it be adapted to the whale-fishing, considers it highly eligible for that purpose, and intends to attempt it immediately.

I hope he will succeed; it would be a chief means of giving stability to the colony. I trust that we shall yet be enabled to avail ourselves of the advantages, *quæ larga profundit fecundo Natura sinu*. As we were working out of Augusta Bay, we saw many seals of the most valuable species upon the rocky islands of Cape Lewin: in truth, this colony only requires that its natural advantages should be turned to account, in order to vie with any other.

It was the intention of Captain Irwin to call at Vasse; and he also contemplated a visit to the Murray River, for the purpose of inspecting that outport, but a foul wind frustrated these purposes.

A river called the Donnelly, fresh at the mouth, and having ten feet of water at the bar, is said to have been seen by Mr. Preston falling into the sea, about thirty miles east of Augusta. If this be the case (which I doubt) it differs very much from every other known river in this climate; to counteract the force of the salt water at the mouth, it must have a powerful stream. I was anxious to persuade Captain Irwin to trace it; but as the

captain of the *Ellen* informed us that his boats were not calculated for such service, we were obliged to relinquish the attempt, and leave to others the fame of *exploring* it.

It was not until the evening of the 3rd that we cleared Flinder's Bay off Augusta; next day we arrived at Freemantle about noon, and in the evening reached Perth, where I was detained until Thursday (the 7th).

On my arrival at home I found every thing right. The servants informed me that they had never seen such heavy torrents of flooding rain since their arrival in the colony: this wetting has prepared the arid soil for crops; and I shall immediately plant potatoes. We have always had some rain in March; but not so much as on the late occasion. Indeed, we are only now acquiring knowledge of the seasons and the method of managing our crops.

13th.—On this day I sat on the bench from ten until six, in a crowded court. I had a list of forty-two cases for argument, questions of cost, &c.

14th.—On the bench again all day.

15th.—Ditto. Our colonists are becoming fonder of law every day. Besides the excitement of litigation, three houses have been destroyed by fire. As they were constructed of inflammable materials, every thing which they contained of furniture and clothes was totally consumed.

During the progress of the conflagration, the

Swan River natives had a row among themselves, and speared two of their own women and one man very severely. Yet this occasion afforded me strong indication of the good feeling of these people ; for I never before witnessed more genuine sensibility than was manifested by the husband of one of the women (a very young and pretty one, however) ; though wounded himself, he bore her in his arms to the hospital, and sat beside her all day, supporting her on his bosom. I hope that they will all recover ; though some of their wounds are deep. The cause of the outrage has not been ascertained.

I was preparing to come away on Friday, when a messenger arrived to inform me that the natives had set fire to Mr. Shaw's hay, and driven away my sheep. The report I did not fully credit ; and on arriving at home, found that the rumour regarding the abstraction of my sheep had originated in their having strayed away during the night, while under the care of a black man whom I now have with me ; they returned like *dutiful truants* in the morning.

Captain Irwin, and Captain Ellis superintendent of the native tribes, have investigated the particulars of what had occurred relative to the hay, to discover whether it had been destroyed designedly by the natives, or by accident. I rode with these gentlemen to the spot, about three miles distant ; it appeared that the fire was not accidental, for three ricks, at a distance from each

other, were consumed by unconnected fires. We have, in consequence, a post of soldiers overlooking the plain on which the mischief was committed.

18th.—At an early hour this morning I had a visit from seven natives ; and seventeen more came in the course of the day. I have hired a new shepherd at 2*l.* per month, and have had a litter of nine pigs ! These have been my last domestic changes of *great importance*.

19th.—While wandering about to-day with a gun on my shoulder, I met a gentleman who informed me that the natives killed a valuable mare belonging to Mr. Tanner, at Woodbridge, yesterday, in revenge it is supposed, for some imaginary cause of offence. The same people were perceived on Friday, behind my place (soon after the hay was destroyed) on the look out, in all probability, for my flock ; but I keep a steady watch, and shall take my gun with me every day, and observe the precaution of putting a brace of pistols in my belt. We have been on good terms with them every where, so that I cannot imagine the occasion of this mischievous outbreak.

21st.—I have been trying to burst asunder the stump of a tree in front of the house ; and I shall then be able to make the ground slope gently from the verandah to the river ; but I sadly want some of you to assist me in my *landscape gardening* ; I have been for two days burning brushwood and grass *near* the house, as a preventive against

fire. This has a paradoxical sound ; but the removal of the inflammable material is a certain security from conflagration in the cleared quarter, and the young grasses are benefited by this process.

After being occupied seven hours in this way, I had several visitors in the evening—among them many ladies. In fact, we see more of our friends here in a week, than you do in a month at home.

22nd.—Sad chapter of accidents to be recorded ; knocked my head against an angular beam, and cut it through my hat ; my dog Carloa jumped at my nose and bit it, by way of showing his affection ; and I afterwards cut myself under the eye by the recoil of a hammer ; then burned my thumb and scraped my hand in moving a burning log ; and, by way of *grand finale*, burned my great toe through my shoe.

23rd.—A boat-load of visitors—male and female—enough to terrify any bachelor out of his wits. Mr. Kingsford, an experienced miller, lately come out, after searching in vain for an eligible mill site with water power, now proposes to cut a deep trench, and lay a pipe from some lagoons behind Perth into the town, to afford him a supply of water. There are some of these lagoons eight miles in circumference, and at no great distance, which he thinks have a communication with each other through the sandy soil, or which

may be made to communicate by unexpensive cuts. Mr. K. seems prejudiced against a windmill; nor does he think that Mr. Revely's horizontal-worked one, can succeed; and insists that more can be done by gravity than by impulse.

26th.—I have just hired a thresher, paying him 1s. 6d. a bushel: he threshes five or six bushels a day, so he earns high wages. My wheat is good, and yields well. I wanted to hire a boy also, but his former master would not give him a certificate, because he had left him without previous warning: this is a wholesome check, which was resolved on at an agricultural meeting, greatly to the annoyance of some of the servants of the colony. While I was at breakfast, the messenger of the Civil Court at Perth came with affidavits, &c., to support an application for a writ against the captain of a vessel, who is about to leave the colony, while there are some unsettled questions of law affecting him. This is one of the few cases in which there is an arrest in civil matters here; and the writ can only be issued by myself.

The same messenger also brought intelligence that a ship had arrived from Hobart Town, but without a mail. This appeared so strange that I determined to ride down and inquire for myself—true enough,—not a single letter, parcel, or package has she brought—nothing but her own freight of cattle, flour, and potatoes. There is some mystery which we cannot as yet develope;

but the general opinion is, either that another vessel had sailed before her, and not yet arrived, or that one was about to follow, which would interfere with her market.

28th.—Went to dine with Mr. Shaw, and had a drive home with Mr. and Mrs. Brockman in a kind of dog cart. I killed a fine sheep this morning—the first which I have regularly slaughtered for sale: it is small, 11lbs. a quarter—but I should not be ashamed to compare it with any mutton in your market. The carpenter and thresher purchased a side at 1s. 6d. a pound. It was one of those for which I gave 2l. 10s.; but as I have been paying a shepherd ever since, my profit is not very considerable.

Perth, March 30th.—A man has arrived in breathless haste to announce that the *Merops*, chartered by Major Nairn, had arrived. Soon afterwards the mail was brought in; but I cannot express my mortification at not receiving a letter; but in the envelope of one to Captain Irwin lay your letter, dated Nov. 1831, and another from Mrs. Logan, who had forwarded it. I shall start from Freemantle to-morrow, to ascertain if the articles mentioned in your letter are on board, and if they can be exchanged for sheep, of which the *Merops* has brought 358; but I know not if they be for sale. She has also imported eleven horses, fifteen head of black cattle, twenty goats, fifty tons of potatoes, twenty-five tons of flour,

and 200 bushels of seed-wheat ; and the other vessel is freighted with forty tons of flour, and some potatoes ; and both have beef and pork.

I shall now enumerate my own stock :—

Sheep (old and young)	66
Cows	8
Horses	2
Pigs	21
Goats	3
Fowls	24
Ducks	5
Dogs	3
Cats	5

It is rumoured that another vessel (the *Georgina*) is also coming out with stock, and that one from Sydney is bringing out 1,000 sheep. If these grand expectations be realised, we shall soon have stock in abundance, and plenty of seed-wheat and potatoes.

*April 5.*—I went last Tuesday to Freemantle, to see about the chest, pork, &c. ; but they have not been yet landed from the vessel. This is provoking ; for, with most feminine curiosity, I longed to open the chest and inspect its contents. By some untoward chance it got into the commissary store at Hobart Town, and Major Nairn had great trouble in effecting its liberation.

To-morrow I must go to Perth ; my judicial duties there being important.

You know that I have never suffered myself



to shut my eyes to the difficulties and inconveniencies of my situation ; but rather forced myself to contemplate them in their sternest aspect. The certainty may be painful ; but why should I struggle to conceal from myself that all my former scenes must henceforth be but as a dream of the days that are gone ? Here is my lot cast. Between us there is a gulf fixed (oh how wide ! ) which few have resolution to cross : yet it is nothing when attempted. It is an excitement, a novelty, a sensation worth the purchasing.

To a first settler, the uncertainty of the how, the when, the where, the everything, connected with his prospects, is distracting ; but to those coming out to join their friends, what is there but pleasure ? I really believe that most persons would think it a change for the better. But it is, as I have more than once observed, too great a responsibility to *advise* the change.

There are now no difficulties in the way of emigration compared with those which the original settlers encountered. We have houses to shelter in, beds to sleep on, inns to quarter at,—meat and bread. But as to any of *yourselves* emigrating—how could you leave property, business, friends, to lead the life of a rustic ? Could you enjoy such a condition, so widely differing from your present habits and occupations ? It is kind in you to *talk* of coming out here, to keep me in spirits ; but I know the impracticability of

it. If any of you have definite intentions on the subject, write, and demand whatever specific information you desire.

I begin to fear that I am bound to this place for life, or for a very long period ; but this is the first time I have dared to express the conviction, even to myself, and I must not dwell on it.

\* \* \* \* \*

The *Merope* is about to sail. If I should not be able to write more in this packet, accept my concluding prayer, that God may bless you all with health and happiness, and receive the assurances of the health, contentment, and probable prosperity of your affectionate brother,

GEORGE MOORE.

## THE COLONY.

ARRIVAL OF LETTERS, ETC.—COST OF WHEAT—HIGH CHARGES  
OF MECHANICS—COST OF WHEAT—RECOLLECTIONS OF HOME—  
SCARCITY OF LABOUR—GOVERNMENT SUPPLIES—BROILS WITH  
THE NATIVES—LITIGATION—EXECUTION OF MIDGEGOROO—  
YA-GAN—THE NATIVES.

*April 15th, 1833.*—I have received your letters and devoured them; have been buried in newspapers, busied in unpacking, airing, &c., and altogether bewildered, with the variety of occupations and amusements which have come upon me all at once, in addition to my ordinary avocations. I cannot bring my mind to a state of sober regularity without going back a little, getting on my old track, and so habituating myself, by degrees, to the novelties of the road\*.

---

\* The chest had been sent, *vid* Van Diemen's Land, in the latter end of 1831, but did not reach its destination by that route till April, 1833. It contained the letters of nearly twelve months; and owing to his not having received them before, our emigrant complained in some of his letters of having been neglected by his friends.

I had just opened the chest on Saturday, when Mr. Mackie came for dinner; and soon after arrived Captain Irwin, to whom I handed his letters, which were packed up along with mine, and we made a regular evening's feast, whilst Mackie, in the meantime, picked fragments of *old news* out of the papers.

My first feelings are those of humiliation and shame—for having entertained even a passing doubt of the strength and constancy of your affections, and deep regret at the consciousness of being so undeserving of the affectionate terms in which you all express yourselves, and of the kind and considerate acts by which those expressions are confirmed and realised.

I sat down several times since to write, but could not arrange my ideas; I wanted to say something PARTICULAR to each of you; I still wish it; but how to do justice to my own feelings and your affections! \* \* \*

\* \* \* \* \*

The chest was admirably packed and secured, but the moths forced an entrance; and I am sorry to say their taste led them to some of the choicest morsels. It is remarkable that they do not appear to have touched any thing of blue coloured cloth; that of olive colour has suffered wofully: a very handsome olive coat, which you sent me, has been sadly riddled by them, and I am not chemist enough to unriddle the cause of this preference. This,

however, is all the material damage ; but some of the light-coloured jackets have been deprived of their colour by damp, wherever it seems to have reached them.

I have already tried the fishing-nets—without success—the trammel net is the only killing one in this part of the river.

19th.—I have sketched for you on paper a sort of section view of what my house is intended to be. It appears almost concealed by the verandah, like a man with a broad-brimmed hat drawn down over his face ; but in this climate, shade in summer, and shelter in winter, are equally desirable. When the verandah shall have been made all round, I can enjoy a walk of 164 feet under it.

I have been busy laying out my boundary lines, and chaining my grant, which is more than half a mile in breadth along the river, and running several miles back. Mr. Wells came here in the evening, and I sold him six young pigs just weaned, at 15s. a piece, to be paid in wheat, delivered on my account, to the Government stores, at 13s. per bushel, to repay the advances which were some time ago made to us, in proportion to the quantity of ground in cultivation, and which were to be paid in colonial wheat, at 15s. per bushel : it costs nearly 10s. to grow it here, at the present price of labour.

20th.—A fire appeared in progress towards Hermitage to-day ; and while I was busy watch-

ing it, three natives came to me: however, they did no harm, but went quietly away after I had given them some bread. All my men were absent kangaroo hunting, but without success. I have, however, myself caught a little turtle (about half the size of my hand) in the net—this is the extent of my success in fishing.

I got a bill to-day from our blacksmith for odds and ends, which I hardly knew of, amounting to nearly 3*l*. Oh, for our *ould Irish blacksmith*! what would he say to 6*s*. for sharpening the plough-share, and 5*s*. for pointing a crow-bar? I sent my praam to a carpenter for repairs, and when it came back it was all split and rent with nails, and it sunk in consequence the same day: for this job the said carpenter had the modesty to ask 30*s*. He is the same man who wanted from me 7*l*. for mending the wheels of my cart, and putting a bullock-pole to it, without the iron work, which would, perhaps, cost me 3*l*. more.

I have now two carpenters (including Robert) making gates, which will cost me 3*l*. 10*s*.; twenty-four hurdles have just cost me 7*l*. 4*s*.; think of these prices!

25*th*.—My people begin to grumble at not getting meat more than once, and *only two* glasses of rum in the day; but I find it quite enough to give them that allowance, and tell them that I shall not alter my system at present, and that in October, when their time of service with me will

have concluded, they may better their condition if they can.

If hops were to be had here, I should try to brew some beer, which would be wholesomer than rum.

I had flattered myself, that, with the help of time and philosophy, the headlong current of my feelings would have been moderated and lowered down even to sluggishness; but some passing \* thought to-day opened a flood-gate which let them rush in upon me like an overwhelming current. I remembered the scenes of home, and the hour of parting, with a painful minuteness of detail, and a vividness of reality, which fell little

---

\* The following lines naturally suggest themselves here.—Ed.

“ But ever and anon of griefs subdued

There comes a token like a scorpion's sting,  
Scarce seen, but with fresh bitterness imbued ;

And slight withal may be the things which bring  
Back on the heart the weight which it would fling  
Aside for ever : it may be a sound—

A tone of music—summer's eve—or spring—  
A flower—the wind—the ocean—which shall wound,  
Striking the electric chain wherewith we are darkly bound.

“ And how and why we know not, nor can trace

Home to its cloud this lightning of the mind;  
But feel the shock renew'd, nor can efface

The blight and blackening which it leaves behind,  
Which out of things familiar, undesign'd

When least we deem of such, calls up to view

The spectres whom no exorcism can bind,

The cold—the changed—perchance the dead—anew

The mourn'd, the loved, the lost—too many! yet how few!”

*Childe Harold's Pilgrimage.*

short of reality itself. *Vain philosophy!* how easily and readily poor human nature resumes its sway when she finds you sleeping on your post! I wish some of you were here; I wish *all* of you were here:—no; 'tis a selfish wish; this life would not do for any of you. You would be obliged to forget, or at least dispense with, many comforts and refinements altogether; you must endeavour to lose the recollection of your former home, and, if possible, of your former friends and feelings. What a task! how difficult! how impossible! yet otherwise no emigrant can be contented and happy here; he must not look back after having put his hand to the plough. *Imagination* paints this sunny clime as the land of fruits; so it is! but time, labour, money, skill, and judgment, must combine to raise them. The land of pastoral ease and simplicity; so it may be! but the flocks and herds must first be acquired; here again money! money! The land of agriculture and smiling harvests; true, it may be! but money is the manure to set them growing.

“ Oh cives, cives querenda est pecunia primum.”

A little will do to set things going, if managed judiciously, and persevering with skill and activity. Servants are so scarce and consequential, that we must serve ourselves as far as possible; so that a fine gentleman has no business here. I read your plan, last night, for supplying us



with workmen ; we have many projects among ourselves, but can do little in this respect, unless Government assist us. I should like to make some arrangement about getting out some of your labourers ; but we are, at present in suspense, every day expecting to hear from England the result of the personal application of Governor Stirling\* ; we scarce know on what ground we stand, whether we shall be better or worse. However, in a month or two we shall know our probable fate. I am prepared for any vicissitudes of fortune.

I wished this morning for you, father, to aid me in keeping the servants in working order ; for you, J——, and W——, to advise and plan improvements, sowings, plantings, gardenings ; for you, S——, to contrive machinery and wood-work ; and for you, my dear sisters, to arrange the housekeeping department, and *snuggify* things ; but you *could* not make things snug here, for I have as yet neither press nor table that you would call such. “ Why do yon not get carpenters ? ” you say. Answer—“ They are idle or inactive in proportion to the exorbitance

---

\* When this letter was written, the colonists were uncertain whether they were to receive any further assistance from the British Government, or to be left to themselves. It has been determined, however, to support the colony, as appears from a letter of Sir James Stirling, written in England. See the copy of this letter in Appendix.

of their charge, (10*s.* a day,) and you can hardly notice a day's work." This is a regular grumble ; so it is, and I must claim the privilege of an Englishman *to grumble*. But I conclude by saying that the weather at this season is the *very perfection of weather*, warm days, cool nights, and dewy mornings.

To-day I got security for some money due to me, and have the power of selling a grant if not paid within a given time. There is a *short-cut* mode of mortgaging land here, which will make it change hands with rapidity. However, as *we* have nothing to do with the old feudal reasons for making land unalienable, I don't see why we should not render it as transferable as any other property. I dug up a few new potatoes, which had remained deep sown in the ground since last season ; they are good.

Another ship from Van Diemen's Land, the *Eagle*, with provisions and a general cargo ; only a few sheep, and these for slaughter.

In the evening Mr. \* \* \* came here on business. I do not well know what to think of him : he was a man of war (I don't mean a wooden one), his words are those of a man of peace ; he speaks at times as if he were averse to litigation, yet he is continually involved in it ; professing puerile simplicity, yet arguing with the casuistry of a Jesuit ; a linguist ; (he suddenly asked me the other day

what I thought was the force of the particle "Eth," in the first verse of the Hebrew Bible?) a great financier, who has proposed a desirable scheme of a bank which was to enrich us all,—the only requisite being that the Government should lend us 100,000*l.*!! Yet with his varied talents, he is a mere boatman, plying on our river.

27*th.*—Ten at night. I have drawn my chair near the *fire*, and have thrown on an additional log\*, that I may write my *journal* luxuriously. A boat having come up the river to-day from Perth, I got ready twenty bushels of wheat, and sent it to the Government store, as the first instalment in payment for advances.

My debt amounts to not much. About 60*l.* for beef, wheat, oats, peas, oatmeal, tea and sugar. The advances were made at a time when these articles were scarcely to be had through any channel. We have had twelve months' credit, and it has been of the greatest assistance to us; indeed I know not what many of us could have done without some such aid. By the way, you wrote that "oatmeal would not keep,"—the Government meal is marked of the year 1829. I have a little of it yet, and it is as good as on the day it was exported. I believe there is some mode of packing it air-tight, and that this is the secret of its keeping so well.

---

\* "Lignum super foco largè reponens."—M. DOYLE, JUN.

I have observed, on a former occasion, that our wheat costs the grower 10s. per bushel; it has since been calculated at 15s. per bushel. Our neighbour, Mr. B., charges 4s. a bushel for grinding it; other expenses, of lost time, &c., are 1s. per bushel more. If we send it to Perth, where it is ground for 2s. per bushel, the distance makes the expense equal to Mr. B's charge; or, if we grind it by hand, the time occupied, the first price of the mill, and its continued repairs, prevent any reduction in the expense of its manufacture. It occupied a very great part of the time of my two men, and they were constantly breaking the mill, which had cost me 5l.; so that you see our ground wheat (whole meal) costs about 28s. per cwt. I cannot help thinking of the beautifully fine American flour, some of which I bought at 13s. per cwt. As to oaten meal, none has ever been ground here, nor is it likely; so that even for *medical purposes* it would be in demand with us, setting aside the Irish and Scotch in its favour. I am sure it would sell at from 25s. to 28s. per cwt.

I had sent James to borrow a seed riddle, and was on the look out for some pigs that were trying to *circumvent* the garden, when I heard a *jabbering*, and lo! *ten natives* were in the act of admiring them at the river-side. As I thought they might carry their admiration to the inconvenient extent of carrying them off, I slipped into

the house and got my guns in readiness, and in a convenient situation for instant use. I then went out, and engaged the unwelcome visitors in most edifying conversation, walking them up through the gate, and past the house, on to the high plain above; and sending Johnny for bread, which I cut and distributed amongst them in due proportion, paying proper regard to old Yellongonga, their chief, and to two of the *fair sex* by whom he was accompanied. I then shook hands with them, and bade them a most *heartly farewell*. They were very civil; but, to say the truth, I have no great desire ever to see their amiable faces again. Amongst them I recognized "Moley," the native whom I had in charge, on the day when we took seven prisoners, on my first coming to the colony. He did not seem to recognise me, nor did I recollect his face, until he told me his name,—one of the young women then present is his wife.

The next event was the finding one of the young pigs at the bottom of the well, rather *past hope*; however, as it bled freely under the operation of the butcher's knife, it may not altogether be a *dead loss*. It was a nice pig, which I intended to keep; but being of an inquiring nature, he went searching after truth (I suppose), which they say lies at the bottom of a well. It is *well* it is no *worse*.

I have sent off the six young pigs that were

bought some time ago by Mr. Wells; our family is therefore diminished, but we have still fourteen of the hog species.

30th.—After dinner yesterday I set out to Redcliff, a delightful ride, by an unaccustomed way, and saw several locations higher up the Helena than I had before. Heard of two ships having been seen off the harbour—a matter of great excitement. Rode to Perth this morning, where I ascertained that the brig *Dart* had arrived from Sidney, bringing fifty tons of flour amongst other things. It is singular that, owing to monopoly, every thing keeps up a high price yet. The enormous sum of 25*l.* per ton is demanded for potatoes, though they are rotting in the bags, people being unwilling to submit to such taxation, and the sellers refusing to lower the price. Another vessel has touched here, and inquired of the pilot if England was at war with the Dutch. On being informed of our blissful state of ignorance, she proceeded on her way to Batavia.

I left Perth about four o'clock, and rode the back way, and arrived here with a glimmering of light (betwen twilight and moonlight), distance about fourteen English miles. Both horse and man (the nobler animal first) were very hungry, neither having eaten from an early breakfast hour. No letter in this vessel that I have heard of.

Four of my sheep have had lambs; it is early

yet, by six weeks, for this is the most trying season: we must manage better another time. My present shepherd is very attentive, but must not be interfered with in any way: he dresses the sheep frequently for the scab, which the new flock brought with them—spirits of turpentine and tobacco-water are his remedy.

After an early dinner, I rode back to the hills this day, to my northern boundary; got on a high hill, with a level top, and had great difficulty in descending by another route: I was quite surprised to find how much of my time it occupied to reach the summit, and how much more rugged and higher it is than I had fancied.

The soil to the very highest points is reddish loam. There is very little mahogany on my grant; and where there is any, it is much intermixed with red gums, which indicate that the sub-stratum is clay at no great depth. The trees are principally white and red gum. Towards the tops of the hills we find grass (kangaroo and other sorts), lucerne (so called here), chrysanthemum, &c. &c.

I saw two kangaroos; but it was when we were among the rocks, and they in the plains below. Juno stood on a jutting precipitous rock, and pointed them, a little frightened, yet half inclined to take a bound after them. Carlo had a run after a wallabee; but it requires a practised dog to kill one, and he is yet inexperienced.

*May 1st.*—Some natives—seven men, one pretty young woman, and two boys—have been here. I gave them some wheat, but they wanted bread very much, and stayed with me for it half an hour, then went to Mr. Shaw's, thence to the barracks, where shots were fired to frighten them; they were unarmed;—I hope we shall not suffer for the indiscretion of the soldiers.

*2nd.*—Captain Irwin came here to-day, and instituted an inquiry into this unprovoked and causeless firing at the unarmed natives, and issued strict orders.

A murder was committed by the natives, the day before yesterday, on the road between Freemantle and the Canning, in consequence of the following provocation. Some time ago, a man who had come from Van Diemen's Land, when escorting a cart to the house of Mr. Phillips on the Canning, saw some unoffending natives in the way. "D—n the rascals," said he, "I'll show you how we treat them in Van Diemen's Land," and immediately fired on them. That very cart, with two men who had been present at the transaction, was passing near the same spot the day before yesterday, when they were met by about fifty natives, who had lain in ambush, and the two men were deprived of life so suddenly, that Mr. Phillips (who was accompanying other carts about two hundred yards behind) was hardly in time to see Ya-gan thrust a spear into one of



them as he lay on the ground. A reward has been offered for the head of this Ya-gan, whether dead or alive; and several others who were active in the affair, will probably be proclaimed also. A native was shot a few days since at Freemantle, in the act of breaking into a store at night.

In consequence of these horrible occurrences we have been very uneasy.

A party of natives have been at Mr. Bull's to-day again, and seem to impute blame to the soldiers alone.

Rain to-night—the first we have had for some time—it is very seasonable and refreshing.

3rd.—After breakfast I rode with Captain Irwin to lay out a line of road from the head of the river to Guildford. Messrs. Tanner, Peyton, and Mears called in the evening, and mentioned that the soldiers had shot a native, and taken three prisoners.

4th.—Two natives came here to-day: one of them is learning to speak English, and is very intelligent. I discovered the names of more than a dozen who were concerned in the recent murder; among others, two sons of Ya-gan, Narah and Willim, the latter a young imp not more than ten or eleven years of age: we are greatly in their power, and must keep on good terms with them, if possible. One of them had a number of frogs (which I think he called “dweep,”) nicely packed up in the bark of the tea-tree, and tied with

grass; these he signified they roasted for food, with a long white root, growing like a parsnep, which they dig up in wet weather.

I have this day dismissed the sawyers, because, in addition to the stipulated price for sawing, they charged 3*l.* for merely making a saw-pit, and felling a few trees.

I have been obliged to pay 2*l.* for the wood-work of a pair of harrows; so you see how mechanics may thrive here; they are the sort of people to get on well, or those who have every thing within themselves,—a self-contained family, as it were, who can do without servants;—the father to plan, the boys to execute, and the girls to cook, wash, and transact all the household affairs,—these are the persons calculated for this place; your *gentleman* will never do, unless he brings out a cheap, steady establishment, a capital to support it, and is willing to employ both himself and them in active labour.

A sad discovery—my rum-cask is empty: I shall have to pay 27*l.* for refilling it; and this will be only one year's supply, even for my small establishment.

With you "grog" means a mixture of spirits and water, in the ratio of one to three, or one to four—no such thing here—it means unmixed ardent spirits. The habits which many of the English peasantry bring with them are ruinous; and every man's expenditure seems to be regulated

by the highest standard ; even men who but seldom taste meat at home, demand it here three times a day ; and now talk of beer in addition to their grog.

Killed a lamb to-day, about six months old, small, but good ; it weighed only 6 pounds a quarter.

5th.—After breakfast, Francis Whitfield, and shortly after ten natives, came here : among them were three women, such unlovely specimens of femininity as I never wish to see again. One of them carried a pretty chubby-faced boy on her back. Would that these visits, like angelic ones, were “ few and far between,” for they are a smart tax upon me, as I am obliged to distribute bread among the visiters. I try to make them understand that they should come only once a week, to levy their ‘ black mail,’ as I call it ; but they do not, or *will* not, understand my hints.

My shepherd (unconscionable dog) wants to get the *head and pluck* as a perquisite for killing sheep, and a glass of grog, besides one every *wet day*. I fear I must part with him, though he is an excellent herdsman.

12th.—Oh, I have had such a week of it !—Sat in court on Tuesday from ten until it was dark, and so every successive day until Friday evening. There were forty-nine actions for trial, several motions for a new hearing, or for staying judgment, &c. &c. *One law argument*. Many of

the other cases were of claims to a large amount ; one for 569*l.*, another for 2,000*l.* damages. I had got a cold and swelling in my neck just before I went to Perth, which was greatly increased by sitting in court every day eight or nine hours, exposed to a draught of wind blowing about my head. I suffered great torture every evening, and passed sleepless nights, but fortunately did not feel pain during the day, probably on account of mental occupation. It was truly a relief to have the week over. I reached Red Cliff yesterday in time for dinner, when I found a merry party : among them, Mr. and Mrs. Brown, Mr. and Mrs. Tanner, Mr. Drake, and Miss Parkes, Messrs. Gull, Erskine, and Dale.

I arrived at home this evening at nine o'clock ; so you perceive I have lost no time in pulling up my arrear of diary.

13*th*.—Got another hundred of cabbages put down to-day, and had my potatoes moulded.

I must subjoin a list of articles which are essential to my little housekeeping, and which you can send out yearly, for we require annual remittances to keep up our stock, as our merchants do not themselves import, but buy up what arrives, and then they sell out at exorbitant prices.

Four casks of pork ; five barrels of American flour, ~~at 10*l.* the cask~~ ; one dress suit of black cloth, ~~one pair of~~ dress boots, one pair of walking ditto, ~~one pair of~~ dancing-shoes ; a web of coarse linen

for ticking, ditto for sheets ; calico sheets, blankets, and counterpanes ; corduroy trowsers, slop shoes, jackets, and waistcoats ; and twelve coarse cotton check-shirts ; a small crate of crockery—strong delf—breakfast and dinner-services ; milk-pans ; short worsted and cotton stockings. The crockery ware might be packed in grass. A little red clover seed will also be acceptable.

The articles named would not only enable me to keep out of the market myself, but to pay those servants whom I must employ and feed, at the rate of 60*l.* per annum each, as calculated by colonial prices. We have no flannel, blankets, counterpanes, nor scarcely any woollen thing in the colony. All our friends at *home* seem to act on the same persuasion, that in this climate there is no need of such things ; yet in our winter we require them as much as you do.

Some things are selling for less money than at former periods, not because they are become more abundant, but because money is more scarce.

14*th*.—The weather is now very pleasant, but the variance of temperature is rather too much : in the middle of the day it is warm, at night cold ; it is just the season for colds, on account of these vicissitudes.

I found several mushrooms to-day. Some natives have been here this evening—a family party—Yellogonga and his two wives, with the boys Parabang and “ Nghnoonig.” The latter word affords

an instance of one of Lyon's "lost sounds;" and it would be a pity if ever it should be found again. *Ngoonig*, *Nghnoonig*—I cannot combine any form of letters which gives the sound correctly; it sounds as if you were going to blow your nose—rather nasal, "I guess."

Got some Swedish turnip seed sown, and transplanted almond trees, and one little apple tree, which I reared from a pipkin. Mr. Shaw came here this evening, took tea with me, and stayed until nine o'clock—a dark and frosty-feeling evening.

15th.—There is very little specie here: and no private bill on England or elsewhere will be taken now, no matter how unexceptionable it may appear to be. *Barter* will do among ourselves, as we have plenty of property; but having no exports, we have but little specie to spare for the payment of any thing we procure from other countries. Emigrants should, therefore, bring out specie, which is now the best investment. Hitherto they have been laying out their capital in goods and merchandise.

Ten able-bodied natives were here to-day, none of whom I had ever seen before, with the exception of one.—*Sturdy beggars*—they will not easily be refused.

Walked to Mr. Bull's this evening, and engaged two bushels of seed barley, at 15s. per bushel, of 45 lbs. weight: this may make you

stare ; but these high prices are the difficulties first-settlers have to contend with, until they can produce enough for the supply of the colony.

19th.—Dale came here yesterday and dined, then came Erskine, and afterwards Captain Irwin, who spent the evening with me: we had great discussions *de omnibus rebus*.

One of the parties which have been sent after Ya-gan have fallen in with some of the hostile tribe, and shot the brother of Midgegoroo, who is Ya-gan's father. Twenty-four natives made their appearance at the opposite side of the river, wishing to get across. I made signs that the boat was out of order, and that they must go round by the ford ; which gave me time to get some wheat ground, and coarse cakes made, which I distributed amongst them. I had previously taken care that all my arms and ammunition should be in readiness, but they were very quiet. Among them were two very well-looking young women, one of whom suckled her child, supporting its body under her arm, whilst its legs were in the bag which hung at her back. Weeip gave me a very good knife, with a wedge of quartz. I was almost alone when this party came ; but by good fortune a number of neighbours and runners happened to come immediately after.

20th.—Midgegoroo, one of the proclaimed natives, has been taken, and there is great perplexity as to what should be done with him: the popu-

lace cry loudly for his blood; but the idea of shooting him with the cool formalities of execution, is revolting: there is some intention of sending him into perpetual banishment.

22nd.—Midgegoroo, after having been fully identified as a principal in three murders at least, has been shot at the gaol-door, by a party of the military. We are all anxious to see how the others will conduct themselves after this execution, *if they discover it*; there were none of them present at it. His son had been sent on board the *Ellen* previously.

23rd.—I came to Guildford, to attend a meeting of agriculturists, to take into consideration the state of the circulating medium; went thence to Mr. Tanner's to luncheon, and immediately after, suffered such pain in my head that I was obliged to set out for home, and have had a succession of hot poultices to my poor *caput* ever since. I am almost afraid to go to bed, for there I suffer exquisite pain, without obtaining even a little sleep.

24th.—Oh! what an interval! I scarce know myself—torture unceasing and no sleep. I have been brought through so far; but I fear this attack will be succeeded by others. My public duties require me to visit Perth on Monday week, and I fear my inability to leave home, for I am literally as weak as a child, and have no appetite. I missed my dear father's advice sadly, for never



having been ill before I do not know how to treat myself.

I have got my old chimney *snugged* up for the winter. My new room will be 18 feet by 15 feet, with two recesses on either side of the fire-place for book-shelves, side-board, or whatever you please: it will be lighted by two French windows, opening into a verandah six feet wide, which runs round the house; and the lawn immediately in front will be green, I hope, all the year round, with lucerne, which I have sown in drills. The other seeds, which came in the chest by Van Diemen's Land, are all dead.

25<sup>th</sup>.—My men have unanimously declared against cocoa, which I lately bought for them during the present high price of tea: there is still, however, room for *negociation* on the disputed point. What a plague servants are!

My shepherd, as I have often said, is a queer fellow: only think of his having given 3*l*. for a set of sheep-bells; they are enchantingly musical, however, and the tinkling, as the sheep come home at night, is one of the most cheerful sounds I have ever heard. This man feels great pride in having his flock look well, and is very jealous of my being inquisitive about them. If I succeed in getting any of Downing's flock, I shall probably dispose of those among my old stock that are aged, as many of mine are; some having been brought from Mr. Trimmer's flock in England at

the commencement of the colony. Those of Downing's are the only sheep to be purchased now.

26th.—A lovely day as to temperature. Mrs. Yule and Mr. A. Trimmer called to see me, and stayed till two. Mr. Burgess came here in the evening, and took tea.

27th.—Have had a long, angry, and wholly unexpected conference to-day with the very spirit of evil himself, I mean the notorious Ya-gan. On seeing several natives approach the house, I went towards them as usual, thinking they were my old friends. To my surprise, the first I met was Migo, whom I had known well at Perth, as the servant of Captain Ellis, and the friend of the chieftain Mundy. On looking round, I then saw Mundy himself (who is proclaimed, with a price on his head): this made me look still closer, and at last I saw YA-GAN standing a little aloof, scrutinising my countenance narrowly, and my manner of receiving them. I had been taxing Migo with having been present at the murder, which he energetically denied. When my eyes first fell upon Ya-gan, I said immediately "What name?" They all answered "Boolgat." I said "No; Ya-gan." At first, he was inclined to persist in the assumed character; but seeing that I knew him perfectly, he came forward, avowed himself, and entered into a long argument and defence of his conduct, in a way that I can

hardly make intelligible to you.; and I confess he had almost as much of the argument as I had. Both parties seemed to consider us as respectively arguing the question. Ya-gan listened with respectful anxiety, and used bold and emphatic language and graceful gesture, with abundant action; he delivered himself boldly. I did not understand him, but replied, "If white man queeple (steal), white man shoot white man; if black man queeple, white man shoot black man; if black man no grydyell (kill) cow, no grydyell sheep, no grydyell pig, white man all same as brother to black man, shake hands plenty, *co-robbery\**, plenty." Here I advanced with open hands to them, which all ran eagerly to grasp, save the moody chief himself. They had grouped around, evidently attending to the arguments on both sides, with great interest, and glad of any thing like a friendly termination. Ya-gan again stepped forward, and leaning familiarly with his left hand on my shoulder, while he gesticulated with his right, delivered a sort of recitative, looking earnestly at my face. I regret that I could not understand him, but I conjectured, from the tone and manner, that the purport was this:—"You came to our country; you have driven us from our

---

\* I suppose we are to understand by this word "associate in friendship,"... "co-robbery" to our ears conveys a somewhat discreditable meaning.

haunts, and disturbed us in our occupations: as we walk in our own country, we are fired upon by the white men; why should the white men treat us so?"

This reminded me of a chorus in a Greek tragedy; and the other natives seemed to act as subordinate characters to Ya-gan. After a short interval, the chief approached again, and fixing his eyes as if he read my countenance, said inquiringly, "Midgegoroo shoot? walk?" (meaning was Midgegoroo dead or alive?) I felt that the question was full of personal hazard to me, and gave no reply. Even Weep came, and anxiously asked the same question, putting his finger to my ear, to know if I heard or understood him. I answered slowly, "White man angry,—Governor angry." However my men assured them that both Midgegoroo and his son were gone on board a ship. Ya-gan still continued to read my countenance, and when he could obtain no answer from me, he said with extraordinary vehemence of manner, distinctness of utterance, and emphasis of tone, "White man shoot Midgegoroo, Ya-gan kill three" (holding up three fingers). I said, "Ya-gan kill all white man, soldier man and every man kill Ya-gan." He scowled a look of daring defiance, and turned on his heel with an air of ineffable contempt. During the latter part of this conference, he held a beautifully tapered and exquisitely pointed spear, grasped like a

stiletto, about fourteen inches from the point, while the shaft lay over his shoulder, with a seeming carelessness. He evidently suspected treachery, and was on his guard against it, taking care not to let my men press on him too closely, and keeping some of the natives between myself and them.

Nothing short of an overpowering force (which I did not possess), or a cold-blooded deliberate treachery (of which I was incapable), would have enabled me to have secured him as he then stood: it was, perhaps, my duty to have attempted his arrest, dead or alive; however, consider the circumstances of my situation,—I had gone among them unarmed, little thinking that the “Wallace” of the tribe was there; he did not relinquish his spear till he was certain of my pacific intentions; and there were *ten* of them, and only three of us,—myself rather invalided.

I despatched a letter instantly to Mr. Bull, as a magistrate, apprising him of Ya-gan's vicinity. He went off for the soldiers; and in the meantime this proclaimed and dangerous outlaw, with a price on his head, and threats (not idle) on his tongue, in sight of the military quarters, and of a magistrate's residence, hemmed in between three or four settlements, and almost in presence of a large force of armed men, was suffered to escape unmolested. The truth is, every one

wishes him taken, but no one likes to be the captor. How could any person, unless a professed blood-hunter, spring upon a man in cold blood, and lead him to the death? How could any one who has a heart fire upon him treacherously from a secure ambush, though *he* be an unfeeling and reckless savage? There is something in his daring which one is forced to admire.

In the evening I heard a trampling of horses, and Captains Irwin and Dale arrived. I told the story; they both galloped off immediately for the soldiers.

28th.—A party was out last night after Ya-gan, but without success.

The government have sent a band of resolute men here to do their utmost to take him. The man who commands this party is called "Hunt," a most appropriate name. On one occasion he followed a party of natives for thirteen days and nights, thinking it was Ya-gan's tribe; at last he got into such a situation that the natives attacked his party. He shot the most forward, who turned out to be Midgegoroo's brother. Hunt was a constable in London: he has just been here to request I would send him word if Ya-gan appears again in this quarter, his party is to lie "perdu" at Mr. Bull's for some time.

29th.—No appearance of the natives here to-day. I have heard that Ya-gan has been seen at

a house four miles down the river, on the other side ; so that strong hopes are entertained of his being shortly taken.

31st.—I have just returned from Mr. Brockman's, where I have been all the morning, settling an arbitration affair which had been referred to Mr. Brockman and myself. I hope we have finally settled it to the advantage and satisfaction of both parties ; but I fear I have not served my health by exposure to the air.

While I was away the natives called at Hermitage, but not accompanied by Ya-gan. One of Midgegoroo's widows was among them, in great grief for the arrest of her son.

June 1st.—My shepherd has not ceased to tease me till I have consented to let him go to Perth, with a venture of ten sheep for sale. He is, I think, a trustworthy man ; but I shall soon see how he has succeeded.

My head does not get on so quickly as I expected ; it ought to have been plastered enough by this time ; my face looks as if there had been not only *plastering*, but *whitewashing*.

2nd.—My shepherd set out for Perth with his sheep early this morning, and James reigns in his stead.

Old Yelloogonga, with three women and children, came here to-day. They begged hard for some sugar. I gave them a little each. The old

man asked me to allow him to go down to the house. I led him down, showed him the kitchen, and then my room, in which I had spread out my guns, pistols, &c. "No, no, no," he said; "no, no." He was quite surprised and puzzled at the looking-glass, peeping over and behind it. After he was gone, Weeip and four others came, one of whom was Ya-gan's son, and it is probable that Ya-gan himself was not far away; but aware of the danger of appearing. I am told they have since expressed their satisfaction at my conduct, saying, that "Mitzer Moore be very good man." Weeip has intimated that no injury shall be done in this neighbourhood; and altogether we hope for peace from this friendly intercourse with them. Weeip to-day received a blanket, which Captain Irwin sent to him,—the women were very inquisitive about Midgegoroo and his son. About the former I still shook my head, and said, he "kill white man."

I told them that if they were quiet, and committed no injury, the boy would soon come back to them. They seem to have an idea of a spirit, "Goodjot," and another "Manjut;" for when Naral asked me to-day how I got the wound in my head, I pointed upwards solemnly and said "Goodjot," intimating that it was a visitation from God; he seemed to understand, but said "Manjut," as if it came from an evil power. I



feel a great interest in them, and hope they will be quiet, and continue friendly. It seems to gratify them greatly when we use their words, as I do whenever I can recollect one. They were trying to describe "sister," when I said "woora" (their own term), with which they were greatly pleased.

We have hopes they will not continue to be troublesome: increase of the white population would no doubt be the most effectual remedy against them; but in our present state, fear of the evil may be the means of preventing the application of the remedy.

I do not gain strength rapidly, and have been weaker than before. I cannot bear exposure, and little exercise overcomes me; but I must go to Perth to-morrow,—would I were back again!

3rd.—A second swelling in my head is coming on, above the former; and yet my public duty obliges me to go to Perth. I must get through it as I can, and then come home and lay myself up "in ordinary" again.

We are now in a state of great suspense respecting the governor's mission, but a month or two must end it. You are, perhaps, now apprised of what is to be our fate; I mean so far as the intention of the British Government is concerned: lose no opportunity of writing to me on this and other subjects, for hearing from you is my only

consolation in this distant solitude ; for solitude such a condition as mine is, and must be.

The mail is just about to be made, *viâ* Mauritius. I can only add—love, love, love to you all.

GEORGE F. MOORE.

## THE COLONY.

SERVANTS—FARMING—THE NATIVES—SHEEP—WHITE ANTS—  
DEPREDATIONS OF THE NATIVES—WOOL—A BOY KILLED—  
DEATH OF YA-GAN—CONCLUSION.

*Hermitage, Swan River, Western Australia.*  
*June the 6th, 1833.*

I CLOSED my last letters to you this day at Perth, at one o'clock, in a very hurried way, as I had known nothing of the sailing of the vessel until I had gone down to attend my duties at court; it was fortunate that I had taken my journal with me, and every day's experience convinces me the more that this mode of writing a letter from day to day is the best I can adopt, though it may not be the most satisfactory to each of you individually; the arrangement of separate letters I never can accomplish, however much I may desire it; indeed they could be nothing but hurried pieces of unmeaning or unsatisfactory scribbling, and could never by that mode convey to you the least notion of my own occupations and the real condition of the colony.

My fears were not altogether groundless, for my shepherd informs me that he misses one of the

sheep which James had in his charge, and he attributes the loss to the natives ; but I have no clue to the truth : the native dogs prowl about like wolves, and might easily carry off a straggler from such a guardian as James. If the natives had been the delinquents, they would have taken more than one, in my opinion.

It may strike you as singular, that my servants do not send letters home. It arises partly from our knowing nothing of the sailing of the ships until it is too late, and greatly (I am sorry to say) from their being too fond of playing-cards, carousing, and singing, which makes them inattentive to any of their duties. I often ask them to write, yet they forget to do so ; I am obliged to say they seem to have very little care or solicitude about my affairs, and I have proportionably lost my interest for them : for the satisfaction of their friends, I will tell you how they live ; and let them judge between us. At early morning, they get a breakfast of bread and tea, with sugar and milk ; at midday, bread and meat, with flour pudding, and potatoes, or other vegetables, without restriction ; at evening, bread and tea—*without limitation of allowance at this or any meal.* They now get two glasses of wine, and one of rum, in the day, and they have abundance of clothing from head to foot. If this be not improvement in their condition, I know not what their condition was ; and yet they are dissatisfied. \* \* \*

has grown a fine manly-looking youth ; but he is self-willed and passionate to a great degree, and fonder of his grog than any one of his age ought to be. You may, if you please, tell my opinion to his father, in a way least likely to distress his feelings. To the use of "grog" I attribute all my troubles with my people: we were compelled at first to give it, and immediately lost all control over our servants. I have great reason to be dissatisfied with mine; for I feel that they are no longer my friends, as I fondly hoped they would be; they care no more for me than for the merest stranger, and look upon me in no other light than that of one who is *bound* to feed and clothe them, and give them *grog*, and for whom they are not under obligation to do any thing willingly—whose wishes, interests, and happiness, they need not regard, farther than as it suits their own convenience. I am sorry to make such an *exposé*. I approach the subject with reluctance, dwell upon it with sorrow and pain, and shall never touch upon it again, unless forced by some very peculiar occurrence.

7th.—Mr. Bull has been here, on his return from the agricultural meeting; at which there was much discussion about banks, and natives, and taxes, but nothing done.

8th.—Sowed some wheat, mangel wurzel, and turnips (broadcast), and got all harrowed in. Had the "honour" of a visit from ten natives;

among whom were two well-looking young women, with children at their backs. These were brought here and introduced by "Beelycomera," Weep's son. On their going in the direction of our sheep, I was alarmed (as the shepherds had come to dinner), and wished them to cross the river; but Beelycomera took a piece of *evyay*\* root and put it in the ground, and began to dig; then pointed where he wished to go. I told him my sheep were there, and expressed my fears; which he removed by assurances that he would do no harm. They passed on. I put a pair of pistols in my pockets, and walking leisurely after them, found them busy digging. They were quite amused at my repeating the words which I had heard them sing at a *corrobbery* \* \* \* \*. I conveyed them to the ford over which I so often crossed myself on my first coming here, and bade them each by name "good bye," as well as I could: a youngster continued calling frequently "good bye," and kissing his hand.

Doodyeep, the girl whose name I mentioned in my last letter, has been married within these few days, and has been the occasion of a great *corrobbery*, which I have heard them speaking of. I suspect that Weep is now on the Canning, by invitation, to eat the remainder of the sheep and goats they had stolen for the entertainment.

---

\* I doubt the correctness of this word, which unfortunately is blotted in the original MS.—Ed.

*9 o'clock at night.*—These plaguy natives have stolen one of my pigs. They are sad hypocrites: those very four who were here were, I suspect, privy to, if not active in, the theft. I had some suspicion on this point in the morning, but they assured me “No, no, Mitzer Moore; no, grydyell;”—and pretended to be so very angry with some whom they named, that I believed them sincere. It is difficult to ascertain the real fact. I wish it was either peace or war between us; but now we must not touch them, for by proclamation they are declared under the protection of the law, as British subjects.

\*            \*            \*            \*            \*

The British lucerne which I sowed, is coming up well: our native lucerne is like it in woody stem, but stronger; its leaves are more like those of the pea, and taste like them; it bears a pea-pod also, and has a red pea blossom. Red clover thrives here better than white. A person who has got Col. Lawton's grant, on the opposite side of the river (opposite J. H. Wright's), is parcelling it out to labourers, and there are already four different lots taken by persons of that class, from twenty to one hundred acres. This has cut up all his grant, for the whole frontage is given away; but he is no farmer; and as he intends keeping a store, it will answer his purpose. This subdivision of land will be very serviceable to

our neighbourhood, as it will afford a supply of labour, and create a small demand for meat.

I have seen nothing of the natives since they killed the pig; perhaps they wish to give themselves time to digest it, and me time to digest the loss of it. However, I feel inclined to apply to this loss what the Spanish proverb says to misfortune—"Ben vengas si vengas sola." I shall get off cheaply, when compared with last year, if I lose no more.

14th.—Mr. Bull came this evening to consider what was to be done about the natives. He wishes still to exercise hospitality towards them; and I agree with him, that if we do not make an effort to come to a friendly understanding and arrangement with them they will annoy us, for we are not able to drive them away so as to secure ourselves, without their extermination. Each tribe has its distinct ground; and they will, of course, rather adhere to it, dispute its possession, and take their revenge on the intruders, than fall back on other tribes of their own countrymen, and fight their way inch by inch with them. It is our interest to show them, first, that we set such a value on our stock as will make us resent and punish any aggression upon them; and next, that we are so united together, "*so much brothers*," that any injury committed against one will be resisted by all. *agreed at last, that*



on their coming to any of our houses, we should intimate our displeasure at what had been done—our determination to be friends for one month, and then to continue so, if no mischief were done within this period of probation. If we all act on the same principle, it will show a combination and concert among us, which may make them respect individual property. In short, to teach them that we make common cause is our only safety, as it is our truest policy.

This is an experiment worth trying, at all events. We cannot be much surprised at their taking a pig or sheep which they find in the bush; for we know that, even in civilised life, the fear of well-understood laws, both human and divine does not secure property in *tempting* situations.' These savages consider a successful piece of theft as a laudable act, and estimate it according to the skill displayed in the accomplishment; like the Spartans, who considered that the dishonour lay not in the *act* of robbery, but in the discovery of it.

*Hermitage, Swan River, 21st June, 1833.*—

It was but yesterday I sent off my last journal letter to you, by the brig *Dart*, viâ Mauritius. I perceive that the Saxony wool is now coming into great repute. M'Dermott has a few sheep of the finest breed, for which he expects a very high price. I look now upon the flock of sheep as a mere

or family interest which I felt in the first year, when I had only a pig and a goat ; but I still feel it with respect to my old pets. My ancient goat had three female kids to-day—five within a year ; there have been instances here of nine in one year. My pigs eat down my cabbages and peas as fast as they recover, so that I find myself induced to exchange them for sheep ; but I am unwilling to part altogether with the breed of my old Bessy, whom I brought out of the Cleopatra on my first arrival.

The natives have had some row among themselves: one of them has come to tell us that Ya-gan is the person who has been doing all the mischief ; that he killed my pig, and speared two of Mr. Burgess's ; and declares that he will kill cows, sheep, and every living thing he can come at ; if the white people will accompany my informant with a strong party, well armed, he will lead them within a short distance of Ya-gan, so as to take him. Now, whether they find Ya-gan interfering with their assumed privileges of plundering us, or encroaching on their grounds, or are really in earnest in their desire to prevent mischief to our flocks, it is an opportunity that ought to be taken instant advantage of.

I have a piece of natural history for you, regarding the white ants.

These make their approaches so stealthily under their covered ways, and, like the wise Dutch, at

Antwerp, on a late occasion, so keep within their strong casemates as to be tolerably secure from observation, as well as annoyance. I had an opportunity lately of seeing some of their domestic arrangements, the description of which may interest you.

Upon the brow of a small rounded eminence there stood a sort of a pillar of clay, about five feet high, which had once filled up the centre of a hollowed tree; the shell of which had been from time to time broken and burned away. This pillar was the work of white ants. As it interfered with the working of the plough, I commenced breaking and digging it down; not without some small curiosity. Numbers of centipedes were found about the outside, where pieces of the wood still remained. The clay, which was surprisingly stiff, hard, and dry, broke off in large fragments. At length, near the level of the surface of the ground, a rounded crust was uncovered, looking like the crown of a dome. On breaking through this, the whole city of the ants was laid bare—a wonderful mass of cells, pillars, chambers, and passages.—The spade sunk perhaps two feet among the crisp and cracking ruins, which seemed formed either of the excavated remnants of the tree, or a thin shell-like cement of clay. The arrangement of the interior was singular: the central part had the appearance of innumerable small branching pillars, like the

minutest stalactital formations, or like some of the smaller coralline productions. Towards the outer part, the materials assumed the appearance of thin laminæ, about half the substance of a wafer, but most ingeniously disposed in the shape of a series of low elliptic arches, so placed that the centre of the arch below formed the resting-place for the abutment of the arch above. These abutments again formed sloping platforms for ascent to the higher apartments. In other places, I thought I could discern spiral ascents, not unlike geometrical staircases. The whole formed such an ingenious specimen of complicated architecture, and such an endless labyrinth of intricate passages, as could bid defiance alike to art and to Ariadne's clue: but even the affairs of ants are subject to mutation. This great city was deserted—a few loiterers alone remained, to tell to what race it had formerly belonged. Their great store-houses had been exhausted—even the very roots had been laid under contribution; till at last its myriads of inhabitants had emigrated *en masse*, to commence anew their operations in some other soil.

We have had a long discussion about establishing a paper currency among the agriculturists, in which was proposed, that each of a certain number, in proportion to their actual possessions, should be privileged to draw promissory notes, payable in colonial produce at market rates. I am opposed

to this, and see many objections to it; but have not yet considered the matter so fully as to state them definitely. Where are we to draw the limit? and how are we to ascertain the actual circumstances of any man? How are we to avoid jealousies, feuds, and mortifications? What nice distinctions will be necessary? If the privilege be confined to men of real property, they will be but a favoured *few*, and who will take their notes but those of this particular class? Will the captains of ships? No!—The merchants? I doubt it! Of what use to them would be “Three months after date, I promise to pay six pigs, a gander and a goose, &c., &c.?”

I treated Doolup, one of our natives, with a ride on the mare to-day; he sat well, and was martial looking; his head adorned with red cock-  
atoo feathers, his face with white paint.

29th.—Weeip and Doolup have come here. I brought Weeip into my room, and had a long conversation with him. He told me that he had dismissed Ya-gan from his grounds. While he was here, my dinner was brought in; he paid the greatest attention to my manner of eating; tasted the salt, and said “no good;” was very inquisitive to know what the meat was. Kangaroo? No.—Beef (cow bullock)? No.—Pig? No.—Sheep? Yes, which he seemed hardly persuaded of. Doolup took such a fancy to his quarters, that he would not go away. I shot two wild ducks on

the river, with which act of sportsmanship he was greatly delighted. He has just taken tea, and is sitting quite at home with the men in the kitchen. Weeip did not know what to make of the milk he saw me drink. Was it moco (water)? No. Grog (he had heard of grog at Bull's, and said it was "no good")? No.—Wine?—No. Cow? No. He was puzzled till I imitated *sucking*; he at once understood me, and said "piccanny cow? yes! yes! yes!" and seemed quite satisfied. He looked at the guns, pistols, swords, bellows, tongs, &c., and now has much to talk and think about; in short, he has acquired new ideas.

This has been a very wet day, with thunder and lightning. I fear we shall have a flood this year like that in 1829 and 1830.

*Sunday.*—Rain, rain, rain; but it looks a little better this evening—river high. I have agreed to go to Perth with Weeip, when the rain ceases. The weather became milder last night, and continued so to-day, though there was some gentle rain. I thought we were likely to have it fine again, but this evening the wind is rising from the north-west (a bad sign).

Some natives have again been scraping up Edward's potatoes. I suspected some of our white people; but after examining the footmarks, it is evident that they were not the rogues. The footmarks are all in one line, one before the other; while a European's go in a double course

the great toe of the natives is always in a straight line with his foot. The great toe of those wearing shoes turns in towards the others. A butcher came from Perth, but would not give me fifty shillings for one of my choicest sheep, though. I know he makes four pounds of them. This is not fair to the grazier or to the public.

Ya-gan was seen to-day behind Dring's, on the other side of the river, and Edward's wife saw some of the natives busy at the potatoes in the middle of the day ; putting these things together, they show he is the delinquent.

I have been thinking it would be an excellent speculation to get out woollen weavers to make our coarse wool into blankets, and none but the fine qualities will be sent home ; none other would be much worth the expense. I have a quantity of coarse wool at this moment, and I know not what to make of it. I sold my merino-wool at one shilling per pound ; there were only sixty pounds of it last year. It would require spinners and carders to carry my plan into effect, but I think it would be a profitable way of disposing of the wool.

5th.—Our pet natives have been playing their tricks to-day at Edward's Ground. They waited till after the dinner bell rang ; and when they thought all the people were at dinner, they came into the garden and scraped up the potatoes with

wonderful dexterity, but were suspected, and narrowly escaped injury by one man's firing too soon. I am sorry to say friend Weep, and my body-guard Doolup, are said to be among the number.

6th.—My shepherd has given notice that he will leave me, if I do not give him three pounds a month, and four glasses of rum in the day. I refused to comply, so I suppose he will go.

14th.—Called this morning on Mr. Harris, and there heard that Ya-gan had been shot at the head of the river; and that a settler had been speared, and an inquest held. You may be sure I was uneasy, and rode home as fast as I could.

On Sunday, when Weep came here, I charged him and Doolup with stealing the potatoes at Edward's; he indignantly denied it, and ably proved an "alibi," in which he was confirmed by Mr. Bull. He has told since that Ya-gan was the person who was nearly shot then; that the ball went through the hair at the back of his head.

15th.—This has been a day differing in its incident from my usual routine. At breakfast time, two men of Mr. Bull's came for my pram, to take the body of a boy (killed by Ya-gan) across the river, to the burial ground near Mr. Shaw's,—of course I gave it. Soon after I went up to see Mrs. Shaw, and coming home I was witness to rather a ludicrous disaster; James,



desiring to cross the river, and having no boat, put his clothes into a bucket and swam across, pushing it before him ; but on reaching the middle of the river, he upset the bucket by awkwardness, and all his clothes, from his shirt to his shoe, went to the bottom : I could enjoy the joke better if I had not to pay for another suit.

After dinner I went to call on Mrs. Bull, and met the funeral of the deceased boy, named Keates, which I accompanied to the grave. Mr. Shaw's eyes being delicate, I, for the first time in my life, was called on to read the burial service ; the deceased was about eighteen years old ; the survivor, his companion, about thirteen. The arrest of Ya-gan was *man's* work ! *Boys* unfortunately undertook it, without sufficient steadiness ; they were frightened at their own act, discharged their guns injudiciously, and ran away, by which the life of one of them was sacrificed.

16th.—On Saturday I saw at Mr. Bull's the head of Ya-gan, which one of the men had cut off for the purpose of preserving. Possibly it may yet figure in some museum *at home*. I should have been glad to get it myself, as the features were not in the least changed. He must have died instantaneously. The other native was not yet dead when the party went to look after them ; the accidental passing of two soldiers frightened the natives (it is supposed), or they would have carried off the bodies.

Ya-gan had a very particular mark of tatooing extending over his right shoulder and down his back, by which many of the settlers recognised him. He wore a soldier's old coat under his kangaroo cloak, to hide this mark, as he had been often warned of his danger. This peculiar cicatrice was flayed from the body by the man who is preserving the head. I have rudely sketched this "caput mortuum" of Ya-gan, which was ornamented with a twisted cord round the forehead.

18th.—After dinner went up to Mr. Bull's in a boat, to get seed wheat for two acres, which I shall still be able to accomplish. I shall thus have eight acres of wheat, one of barley, one and a half of oats, and about the same quantity of potatoes, turnips, cabbages, &c., besides an acre and a quarter of lucerne. This will, I think, be ample for my supply. We want seed potatoes in the colony very much; they grow at any season of the year, but succeed best if planted in March and September. I tasted some excellent beer which Bull is brewing.

24th.—The shepherd and James sat up all last night in the sheepfold, watching the native dog, and determined to shoot it; yet, with all their watching, when daylight came, they found two lambs torn to pieces in the fold. What exquisite watchmen! I have now 226 full-grown sheep, besides 9 blind ones, and 101 lambs.

29th.—The shepherd has sent in word that if

I buy a set of bells for him, he will stay with me. I have bought 20 sweet musical regularly tuned bells, with straps and buckles, at three shillings each. I have before mentioned the very pleasing tone of these bells; it is delightful to hear them on a fine evening. Had a dish of turnips to-day; —by the way, the last seeds you sent me were too old; those of mangel wurzel, parsnep, carrot, cabbage, and onion, failed altogether; the lucerne alone is growing; the flower seeds do not show yet.

31st.—To my surprise, Mr. Whitfield brought me letters and papers this day. You say “there are so many that they will take me a month to digest;” you little know my powers of digestion in that way. I am a most insatiable glutton in such respects. It was dinner time to-day when I received them. I have already gormandised every syllable of all your letters, aye and washed them down with the whole contents of four newspapers which came along with them; “my great revenge had stomach for them all.” Thanks, thanks to Almighty God for the measure of health and mercy vouchsafed to you all, and may they be graciously continued! My people have been spelling hard at their letters, and at some of the papers; this part of the business devolves on Johnny, but there is generally a complaint that he cannot “make it out right,” and an appeal to me.

By the way, my own letters are an odd medley ;  
I hope that no *stranger* \* sees them. \* \* \*

\* \* \* \*

---

\* How astonished Mr. Moore will be when he sees them so unceremoniously brought into print, and hears that they have been read, and, as I trust will be the case, by hundreds, or perhaps thousands of *strangers*.

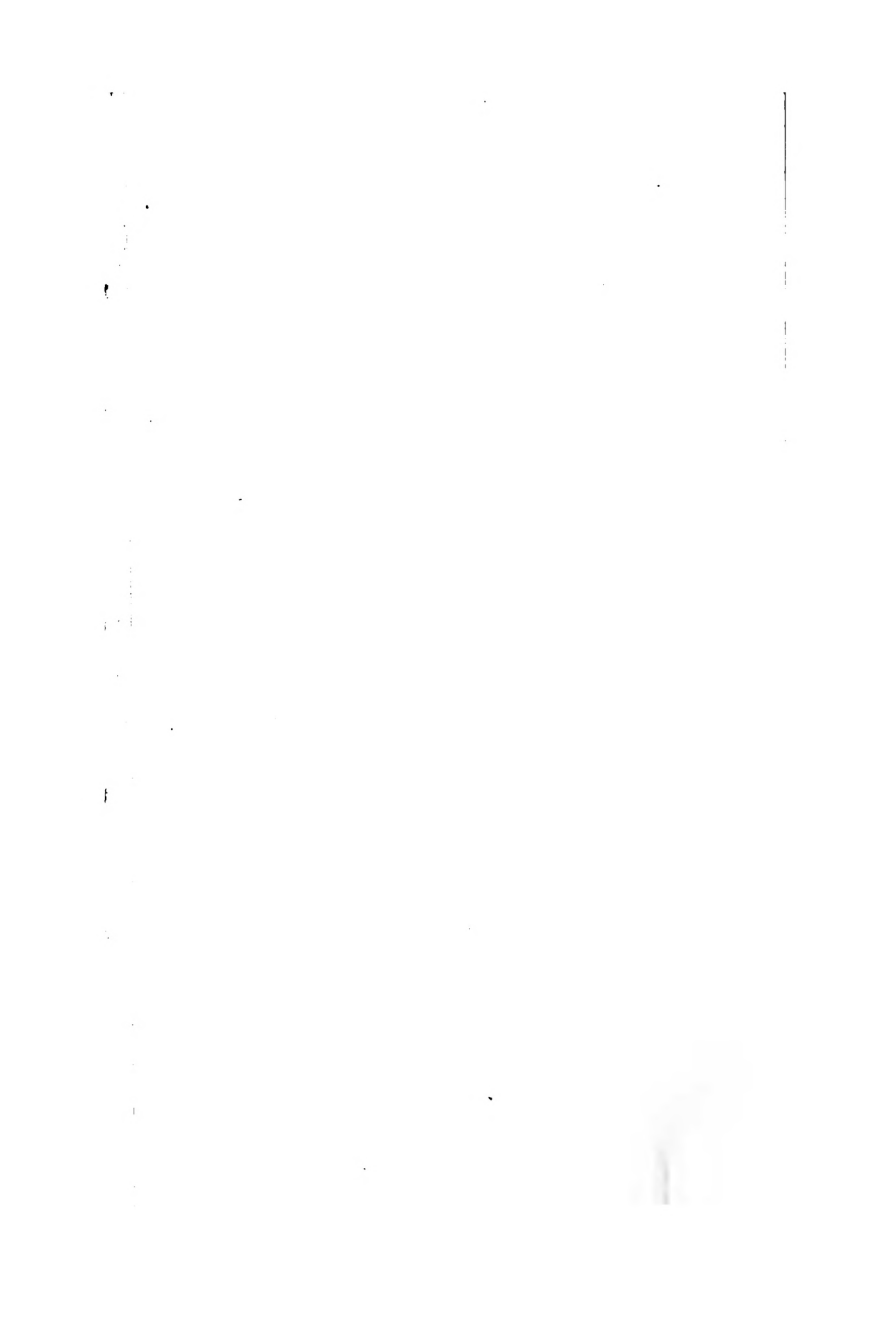
THE END.

LONDON:  
SHADBURY AND EVANS, (LATE T. DAVISON),  
WHITEFRIARS.

a 93  
76  
H.C.







**This book is under no circumstances to be  
taken from the Building**

[illegible]



